

## 1<sup>st</sup> Timothy-2

### Lesson #57 Series # 467 1Tim 4:7

- I. We are in this life as believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in order to lead a counter attack against EVIL.
- II. Freedom through Military Victory and Law Enforcement Function and Armed Citizens
  - A. Richard S. Stoler has had at least 5 threats on his life and 3 break in's of his home, he has made more than 50 arrests in Allentown NJ, as a part time Police Officer.
    1. The courts have denied him permission for a pistol permit for off duty protection, Mounmouth County John P Arnone, decision upheld by the appellate court of NJ.
    2. Today in NJ possession of "hollow point ammunition" is a felony for EACH CARTRIDGE.
  - B. Robert E Marriman, MO. Drug Store for Drugs and took the 16 year old son to drive him away in their car, Marriman shot the gunman as he went out to the car with the boy and killed him instantly.
  - C. Many more armed citizens then and each day
- III. Doctrinal Defense against Apostasy continued:
  - A. Review the Pastor Teacher
    1. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the male believer receives the spiritual gift from God the Holy Spirit of Pastor Teacher Guardian
    2. If he then functions for consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and grows under HIS right Pastor Teacher then he will reach AWARENESS of his own spiritual gift because of his own Spiritual Maturity.
    3. With this awareness he reaches a point of ADVERSITY to test the gift and may then begin the functions involved in preparation which takes many spheres of activity and some time and has a lot of intensity.
      - i. Academic
      - ii. Military Service or some other system of intensive self discipline
      - iii. Function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception under some extremely well prepared Pastor Teacher or a faculty of a seminary.
    4. Then this man reaches a second stage of adversity and the recognition point of ordination which may occur before or after he accepts a pastorate.
      - i. This may be his acquiring a pastorate in a local church which is not his right church and one which has no excuse for existence being made up of legalists and maligners and this will be further training for the pastor.
        - a. He will stay with this church for roughly a year if he passes and it will be long enough for him to be trained in certain areas of pressure.
      - ii. Others may go to their right local church immediately and stay with that local church for an indefinite period of time.
    5. Many people who have the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher NEVER become ministers of any local church.
      - i. They fall by the way side for several reasons:
        - a. Some never get any bible teaching and move directly into reversionism and stay there permanently.
    6. Until the man who has the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher is qualified with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he is not qualified to function with that spiritual gift.
    7. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the key to the Pastor Teachers life.
    8. Bible Doctrine taught from the pulpit is the ONLY defense in the Church Age against apostasy.
    9. The Pastor Teacher must constantly exegete and teach in an expository manner.

10. There is no substitute for ICE teaching in the Church Age and no protection against apostasy for the believer apart from the daily consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
- B. Principles of Separation:
1. You MUST keep on consistently rejecting and avoiding association with reversionists.
    - i. If you stay with them very long something will rub off on you.
    - ii. If you are to avoid getting into reversionism YOU MUST STAY AWAY FROM THESE PEOPLE.
  2. Being like a grouchy old woman means that whether male or female this person is a petty effeminate person.
    - i. They are silly, absurd, effeminate,
- C. Evil is the policy of Satan ruler of this world.
1. When a believer under the influence of evil accepts this policy he enters the stages of reversionism.
  2. Apparently OLD women (over the age of 30 ff) are prone to emotionalism and silliness, with the exception of some associated with Berachah???
  3. Lack of discernment comes from being under the influence of evil and results in susceptibility to any type of false doctrine but especially false doctrine which appeals to the emotion or approbation lust.
  4. Timothy is being bullied by old women in the church of Ephesus who are apostate and reversionistic and they have succumbed to deceitful and often sweet hypocrisy.
- D. As a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ advancing with Bible Doctrine toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, we must have wisdom from this accumulation of Bible Doctrine.
1. We must be people smart and wise to detect false doctrine from any source and your Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is a warning system when false doctrine is presented.
  2. This is like the silly old woman who can be taken in by anything.
  3. Some women with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul have OLD Age which looks good on them and they are honorable women.
- E. There are some men who fit this profile as well being LIKE silly old women and who can be taken in by anything.
1. Giving in the Christian Way of Life is to be from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and without any emotional connotation.
  2. If the lord has entrusted the believer with great wealth have the responsibility of using it in the right way before the lord.
- F. Silly old women were running the church at Ephesus which was the center of Christianity at that time and this church was falling apart because of there being bullies like Hymeneas, Philetus and Alexander instigating a petticoat government in the local church.
1. Timothy had good Bible Doctrine but was not teaching or communicating doctrine properly.
- G. The Pastor Teacher has a function for his whole life of study and teach Bible Doctrine under a system of strict disciplined training.
1. The Pastor Teacher MUST do this to function properly in his spiritual gift.
  2. Never must they be taken in by tales fit for old women.
  3. It requires great self discipline to stay in training and good physical condition.
  4. It takes character, consistency and self discipline to exercise consistently and regularly.
  5. It is bad for a man to start out with great physical conditioning but end up flabby as an old man but it is far worse for a Pastor Teacher to do the same thing with regard to his spiritual exercise, growth and training.
  6. Without character a man who was physically fit at 30 will become the FLABBY older man of 60.

7. When a man decides to NOT exercise for his whole life then it is stupid for them to START at all because once you build up muscle the only way to go is DOWN.
8. This is the same for the Pastor Teacher and once the Pastor Teacher starts studying and teaching he must do it for his whole life or GO DOWN and become flabby spiritually.
9. The man with the gift of Pastor Teacher has no business in getting involved in any form of organized religion or function but must train for the rest of his whole life with study and then teaching.
10. To train all your life physically or spiritually takes CHARACTER and SELF DISCIPLINE.
11. When a Pastor Teacher starts out with studying and teaching and then later stops he is worse off than ones who never do it and this is truly tragic.

H. Principles:

1. This verb for exercise is used since it requires great self discipline to be consistent in training and exercise.
2. This verb applies to the Pastor Teacher ONLY.
  - i. Timothy here is the one in question and he is not only a wimp but a flabby wimp spiritually.
3. The Pastor Teacher must be consistent in his exegesis and analysis of the word of God as part of his spiritual training.
4. The verb (gr) Gumnazo means to exercise naked and this implies that the Pastor Teacher guarding of the local church is NAKED before God and has NO merit in himself.
  - i. In his studying and teaching as his training.
5. God in his matchless perfect grace has provided the means for the Pastor Teacher to dig out of the scripture the meaning of any passage so that it can be communicated to the congregation.
  - i. When the Greek exercised naked when he went back into the streets he put his robes back on and people did not see his great muscular development but they did see the results in his life and health and stamina and his ability to function in a very healthy way.
  - ii. In the gym he trained and out of the gym he communicated his training.
  - iii. Stamina and Muscle exercise are good for HEALTH.
6. While the Pastor Teacher has great authority in the local church he is helpless before God and the beneficiary of GRACE.
  - i. While we don't see the Pastor Teacher studying naked before God we see the results in the communication of Bible Doctrine.
  - ii. Just as the man who exercises shows the results in battle and vigor of the nation.
  - iii. The women of the ancient Greeks in Sparta did similar exercise as the men and were the most beautiful women most likely of all time.
7. The Pastor Teacher must be a plodder and must do so in self discipline and persist in the daily study of Bible Doctrine.
8. The Pastor Teacher must not be distracted by "Tradition" of calling on people or going around to pray over things, etc.
9. The Pastor Teacher can get out of spiritual shape by DISTRACTIONS from their primary function of studying and teaching.

**1Tim 4:7**

**v7: But, keep on declining, avoiding, rejecting, refusing non-exclusive desecrated places where stupid common peasant people can go, desecrated reversionism, referring to Gnostic doctrine or any false doctrine or system including any legalistic systems and profane, silly, absurd, myths, stories, legends and tales as false doctrine fit only for old women which brings believers under the influence of EVIL, BUT constantly exercise and train yourself in a system of disciplined spiritual training for the purpose of godliness, the Super Grace balance of residence of God the Holy Spirit with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul;**

- I. Freedom through military victory
  - A. Tech Sgt Bernard P. Bell, US Army, I Company 142<sup>nd</sup> Infantry 32<sup>nd</sup> Infantry Division, Tx National Guard, Middlevare France 18 Dec 1944
- II. Principles:
  - A. Youth is often wasted on the young people but AGE reveals all of the flaws in anyone.
    1. There is no longer youth, vigor, vitality and beauty to cover the flaws.
    2. People are then seen as they really are when they get old.
    3. Apart from Bible Doctrine there is no cosmetic treatment which will help this situation.
    4. The body will age but the soul with Metabolized Bible Doctrine will never age and it is better to reach old age with a soul filled with Bible Doctrine than look like the movie stars of today, with a youthful body and appearance.
    5. There is no such thing as an attractive OLD person they are either the most horrible person around or the best.
- III. Review of v7 principles
  - A. The Analogy:
    1. Nourishment from Bible Doctrine in v7 emphasizes the analogy to the body absorbing food to be sustained and produce energy.
      - i. You must absorb a quality and quantity of food to sustain health and produce energy.
    2. The believer must absorb spiritual food of Bible Doctrine for sustaining his Spiritual Life and to have spiritual energy to honor Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
    3. This spiritual energy must be used in spiritual exercise for spiritual growth, development, strength.
      - i. We are here to become strong spiritually a major issue in the Angelic Conflict.
    4. The believer develops the spiritual muscle of Super Grace Status Quo through constant consistent exercise of the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
      - i. Your daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception is analogous to an exercise program which keeps you physically fit and in good health.
    5. While v6 emphasizes the defense of Bible Doctrine teaching v7 emphasizes the result of Bible Doctrine teaching.
    6. The command to Timothy applies to all believers.
      - i. Our defense against apostasy and influence from evil is the constant consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
      - ii. This is spiritual exercise resulting in great spiritual stamina and coordination of the Super Grace Spiritual Life.
    7. The emphasis on this verse is EXERCISE which demands total self discipline and understanding of the objectives.
    8. For the Pastor Teacher like TIMOTHY the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception requires and is a matter of self discipline with plodding and study and teaching.
      - i. This Pastor Teacher studying and teaching is the intensive spiritual exercise which is beneficial to him and his congregation both just as physical exercise is beneficial to health.
      - ii. Physical exercise is beneficial and challenges both the body to build it up and also the character of the soul.
      - iii. It takes incredible self discipline to persist in exercise consistently and exercise when you don't feel like doing it and when you hurt.
      - iv. Thus exercise is a perfect analogy to the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
      - v. You do not build up your body by exercising when it is convenient and you cannot grow up spiritually in this manner either.

- vi. These principles are applicable to both pastors and members of the congregations both of whom in this Christian Way of Life must STUDY daily and consistently.
  - vii. Timothy was a wimp and very overrated and was not capable of handling Ephesus church at this time.
9. For the Royal Family of God in the congregation there must be self discipline and it is analogous to exercise.
- i. Assembly and attendance in bible study class, concentration on the teaching of Bible Doctrine, Good manners, Avoiding other distractions, Poise Objectivity, persistence in spite of distraction or disillusion.
  - ii. This is the spiritual exercise which WILL take us to the high ground of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

#### IV. The Importance of spiritual growth.

- A. This analogy of exercise with spiritual growth is a BENEFICIAL analogy.
  - 1. Both exercise and the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception are beneficial
  - 2. The danger of exercise and the only detrimental part of it is STOPPING Exercising
  - 3. The Danger of the Grace Apparatus for Perception is STOPPING the use of it.
  - 4. Exercise is beneficial to the body and also soul within reason.
  - 5. Bible Doctrine is also beneficial to the body and the soul mostly.
  - 6. If you stop exercise after doing it for years you will get FLABBY.
  - 7. If you stop the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine you will get flabby spiritually the DIE the Sin Unto Death.
- B. This is a reference to physical exercise setting up an analogy.
- C. A few moments are needed to examine the concepts of body training from exercise:
  - 1. There are 3 systems for exercise
    - i. Cardio Vascular Exercise which is running or other endurance sports such as bicycling, swimming, or running sports.
    - ii. Coordination Exercise which is skill developed and used in all sports
    - iii. Muscle Building exercise which provides strength, symmetry, definition.
  - 2. All systems require strong motivation and strong self discipline to be consistent and persistent.
  - 3. Consequently the SOUL and Body are involved in all systems of exercise and there is a very close coordination between Mental Attitude and Self and Group Discipline needed to achieve in the area of exercise.
  - 4. Every great athlete spends at some time a great deal of time in training.
- D. Physical exercise is beneficial but this benefit is limited.
  - 1. You must exercise repeatedly not only one single time therefore there is a time limitation.
  - 2. Spiritual exercise and consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception however has both temporal and ETERNAL benefits from Super Grace and surpassing grace blessings.
- E. This is an antithetical analogy:
  - 1. Physical exercise has temporal benefits which are limited.
  - 2. Spiritual exercise has both temporal and eternal benefits which are unlimited.
  - 3. There is no aspect of life which is not benefited from the spiritual exercise of the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - 4. Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Super Grace are more beneficial than all aspects of health, muscle, stamina etc.
  - 5. All aspects of life whether adversity or blessing are benefited by spiritual exercise.
  - 6. For the Royal Family of God spiritual exercise is more important than any physical exercise and obviously more beneficial.
- F. The believer need not be concerned with circumstances of society for his benefit.
  - 1. God will provide all that you need and often what you desire apart from the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

2. You can have success, wealth, prosperity, leadership ability, etc totally apart from the social politics required by the Cosmic Dynasphere systems.
  3. There is no area of life where God will not bless the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
  4. All this prosperity and success is totally apart from you needing to brown nose the boss or politic before committees or do anything obnoxious to you or do anything special to get ahead except doing you job.
  5. This is all accomplished through Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine consistently.
- G. Principles:
1. Physical exercise is beneficial for time but spiritual exercise is beneficial for both time and eternity.
  2. Physical exercise is beneficial in LIMITED Areas of Life.
  3. Spiritual Exercise is beneficial in EVERY Aspect of life providing capacity and blessing for life, glorification of God.
    - i. This is something no athletic ability can ever achieve.
  4. Physical exercise has some benefits but spiritual exercise has MAXIMUM benefit.
  5. Self discipline in spiritual exercise from the consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception is infinitely superior to the self discipline required for physical exercise.
  6. Spiritual exercise is the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception resulting in maximum growth to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
  7. Physical exercise is a key to certain functions in life while spiritual exercise is the key to and beneficial in every function of life.

#### **1Tim 4:8**

**v8: For example you see, on the one hand, intensive vigorous physical exercise training of the body is beneficial, dogmatically is what is expected of exercise, with reference to a few things such as health, strength, beauty, athletics, coordination, stamina both physically and mentally on the job, but on the other hand, Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace balance of residence between Filling of God the Holy Spirit and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from the daily consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception; godliness, is useful and beneficial with reference to all things in time and eternity, having and holding promise of benefit for the present life time is in the form of 5 categories of Super Grace blessings, and also for the life which is about to come in the form of surpassing grace blessings and rewards.**

#### **Lesson #59                      Series # 467                      1Tim 4:14 after Ordination**

- I. The Gift of Pastor Teacher
  - A. God realized that the worst thing which could happen was for one church to lean on another church for fellowship and teaching of Bible Doctrine.
    1. Every local church must lean only on the word of God and remain autonomous.
  - B. Timothy has been neglecting his Spiritual Gift of Pastor Teacher and being bullied by congregational members.
    1. It is prohibited that the Pastor Teacher disregard his spiritual gift.
- II. The Steps of the Ministry of Pastor Teacher:
  - A. The 1<sup>st</sup> step occurs at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, God the Holy Spirit sovereignly bestows the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher to male believers only.
    1. This does not mean they will ever become Pastor Teachers or guardians of a local church but it means that they should.
  - B. The 2<sup>nd</sup> Step occurs only if the individual after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is exposed to good consistent bible doctrine teaching in a classroom setting in a local church resulting in enough Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so that he can become aware of his spiritual gift.

1. The awareness is based on spiritual growth from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
- C. The third step is ASPIRATION to become and function as a Pastor Teacher: **1Tim 3:1**
1. These 2 steps demand preparation for the ministry.
- D. The 4<sup>th</sup> step is the necessary preparation for the ministry
1. In the early church the Pastor Teachers were trained by advanced believers in his congregation MEN.
  2. Paul had the first seminary an ambulatory traveling seminary
  3. In our time there is organized education preparation available and is generally what is needed but NOT ALWAYS followed.
  4. Military training or advanced academic training helps to develop self discipline and basic concepts of authority which are essential.
    - i. No man can enter the ministry of Pastor Teacher without significant time elapsing where by he is beaten into the ground and ground to dust under authority.
    - ii. Then he sprouts out of the ground as a new person with self discipline.
    - iii. Self Discipline is essential for LIFE in general and its lack is the failure of MOST people
    - iv. Lack of self discipline leads to lack of capacity for life
  5. College and theological seminary or intensive concentration on Bible Doctrine in one way or another and no 2 pastors are prepared in the same way.
- E. The 5<sup>th</sup> stage is the completed preparation and transition
1. This is a confusing stage and the lord may or may not open a local church for the new Pastor Teacher immediately.
  2. The lord may provide a temporary small congregation for this Pastor Teacher allowing him to wait patiently.
  3. Other men are given a church to which they are led and it is a special training ground for the new Pastor Teacher and it is NOT their right local church and it last about 1 year.
    - i. The pastor emerges from this as a new wiser person
    - ii. The congregation is made up of weirdos and goofballs, obnoxious SOBs and legalistic pests.
    - iii. These are used like the Marine Corps uses a DI to train their troops and they exist simply for the purpose of training the new Pastor Teacher.
    - iv. This is the same as marrying a woman who has no inclination to please her husband for almost any reason.
    - v. This is to shake up the male and get him in line with the program
    - vi. *Along the lines of marriage the penalty for Bigamy is having 2 Mothers In Law.*
    - vii. God keeps these congregations of vicious evil people in operation JUST to train the new Pastor Teacher.
    - viii. These legalistic apostate arrogant congregations have no excuse for existing at all.
    - ix. They are only transitional congregations and not the new Pastor Teacher's final resting place.
  4. Other men may get jobs in the business world until the lord opens a door for a congregation.
  5. Some confusion stems from the fact that there is NO uniformity of function at this stage and God deals with each Pastor Teacher in a different way under this concept.
- F. The 6<sup>th</sup> stage is the Pastor Teacher receiving his right local church
1. This congregation is responsive to his teaching of Bible Doctrine and to their own right Pastor Teacher.
  2. This does not mean it is one constant happy time for the Pastor Teacher because there will be differences of opinion and things to straighten out and new people coming in so he can do it all over again.

3. This is the stage where the Pastor Teacher begins the hardest and most rewarding phase of his life in Exegesis, Analysis and communication of Bible Doctrine.
  - i. This is where the Pastor Teacher settles down to become a very strong student of the word of God.
  - ii. This is also a danger stage since enthusiasm with his initial messages often leads the Pastor Teacher to think he has already reached a peak of spiritual growth and therefore he should WRITE books or have a taped ministry ETC.
- G. Somewhere in stage 5 or 6 the Pastor Teacher is examined and tested and then ordained in some local church
  1. This ordination is the public recognition of his spiritual gift where the local church is saying they recognizing his spiritual gift and what the lord has done in the life of this new Pastor Teacher guardian of a local church.
  2. It is a constant reminder that he must NEVER neglect the spiritual gift and constantly teach Bible Doctrine to his congregation.
  3. The ceremony reminds him daily that he has a constant reminder that he must teach Bible Doctrine every remaining day of his life.
  4. When a man is ordained he is saying in effect that he believes that there is only ONE elder in any given local church, ONE ruler and anyone who believes in plurality of elders should never be ordained.
  5. The local church ordaining men into the ministry of Pastor Teacher CANNOT help the men but only recognize what has occurred in their lives.
  6. The ordination does not make them any better or worse it is a local church recognizing their spiritual gift.

### III. The failures of Timothy include:

- A. Timothy was a wimp (Weak in the Mountain Phase – of ranger training).
- B. There must be in every generation of **Human History** in the Church Age a number of men who are given the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher.
  1. They are not prophets since this infers an INCOMPLETE canon of scripture.
  2. They are not priests since in the Church Age there is a universal priesthood of all believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  3. They are the Pastor Teacher Guardian or ministers and they minister to the most special group of all history the Royal Family of God.
- C. The meaning of (gr) prophetia refers to doctrines which have not yet been reduced to writing at the point of the writing of this passage.
  1. Timothy has had academic classroom work under Paul in the past.
- D. After Timothy was finished with his academic preparation there was “Laying on of Hands” by the men who taught him.
  1. Deacons of the local church lay on their hands in their recognition of the spiritual gift of the new Pastor Teacher.
  2. The ones laying on the hands includes those who have the gift themselves and the authority to recognize the qualification of the new Pastor Teacher and his spiritual gift.
- E. Every Pastor Teacher by receiving remuneration or help from the local church congregation in terms of giving for his support he is free to devote his time to cultivate his exegesis and expository system of teaching Bible Doctrine.
  1. In this way Timothy and every Pastor Teacher can stop neglecting the spiritual gift in him.
  2. All pastors must function in this way.
  3. All pastors must be consistent, preoccupied with Bible Doctrine and it must be an obsession with him.
  4. Any time a Pastor Teacher with the spiritual gift does not exercise consistency in his study of the word of God he loses his personal advancement in the word and his congregation loses also.



- F. The greatest shock for the new pastor will be to see the people who were so overjoyed to get him to come teach for them in their local church turn against him
  - 1. This will occur over and over again but being consistent in the study of the word will insulate him from these things and he will become a totally INHUMAN person with regard to “popular Opinion”.

**1Tim 4:14**

**v14: STOP neglecting, disregarding the Spiritual Gift which is resident in you freely given by God the Holy Spirit, one wiser than you, which was given to you for the sake of prophecies or doctrines previously learned in your preparation which have not yet been reduced to writing, associated with the laying on of hands by the council of other Pastor Teachers and Deacons in the local church in recognition of the new Pastor Teacher’s spiritual gift.**

**1Tim 4:15**

**v15: BE Practicing or cultivating these things, keep on being in or occupied with these things, in order that your spiritual advancement or progress might be, maybe it will and maybe NOT depending on whether you study diligently, constantly, consistently, conspicuous and apparent to your entire congregation.**

**1Tim 4:16**

**v16: Keep on paying close attention to yourself and that Bible Doctrine or public teaching, persist in these same things, for by doing this you will deliver Evil the satanic policy for this world, both yourself and the ones hearing you in the congregation.**

**Lesson #60                      Series # 467                      1Tim 4:9**

- I. The Word of God is our life and we belong to the lord after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God for our whole life.
  - A. The economic problems of the United States of America in 1975+
    - 1. There was at that time total divorcement from reality by the executive branch of the government, the congress in both houses and the judiciary with a total breakdown of the understanding of the Laws of Divine Establishment and our need for them in our nation.
    - 2. In addition there is failure of understanding of the necessity of maintaining true spiritual values.
    - 3. The military and Law Enforcement have both contributed to our staying together as a nation and functioning as one under some degree of freedom.
  - B. International Money Line Vol 2 #8 16 April 1975, “Economic Armageddon coming & How it will effect your life”
  - C. Lynch International Investment Survey, “What will be at the end of the tunnel”
  - D. Bill Baxter, May 2 1975 ON GOLD
  - E. When a person is a liberal and he makes as he inevitably does a mistake in one area he will make it in all areas eventually.
    - 1. It is liberalism started by the idiot Franklin Roosevelt who started the principles and situation by which we simply postpone our problems such as economic deterioration by fomenting greater and greater regulation and inflation.
    - 2. Our only answer is Bible Doctrine and Job 5 clearly describes the fact that there never was a super grace believer who starved in any depression and never will be and the sooner we make it to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace the better.
- II. Principles of v8:
  - A. Physical exercise is beneficial for time but spiritual exercise is beneficial for both time and eternity.
  - B. Physical exercise is beneficial in LIMITED Areas of Life.
  - C. Spiritual Exercise is beneficial in EVERY Aspect of life providing capacity and blessing for life, glorification of God.
    - 1. This is something no athletic ability can ever achieve.
  - D. Physical exercise has some benefits but spiritual exercise has MAXIMUM benefit.
  - E. Self discipline in spiritual exercise from the consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception is infinitely superior to the self discipline required for physical exercise.
  - F. Spiritual exercise is the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception resulting in maximum growth to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

- G. Physical exercise is a key to certain functions in life while spiritual exercise is the key to and beneficial in every function of life.
  - 1. The Royal Family of God is commanded to take spiritual exercise every day and physical exercise is only an option!
- H. Godliness is beneficial with reference to all things:
  - 1. The stupidity of the domestic and foreign policies of the United States of America at this time have been incredible and put us on the brink of destruction which we were delivered from by the Grace of God and spiritual advance of the believers in that time period.
  - 2. The situation has never been worse until 2008 and continues today even with a great president and the stupidity of the congress and judicial branches of our government is beyond imagination.
  - 3. No matter how great any disaster can become in the nation God has the same Super Grace blessings for the Super Grace believer he would have in a time of prosperity.

### III. Godliness:

#### A. Definition:

- 1. Derived from 2 nouns: Eusebia, Theosebia == in the bible Godliness
  - i. These both mean Duty to God, they are technical for the balance of residence in the soul of the believer.
  - ii. They refer to Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and reverence to Christ
- 2. In the body of each believer in the Church Age God the Holy Spirit indwells the believer.
  - i. When the believer is without or outside of sin God the Holy Spirit fills and controls the soul of the believer.
  - ii. This is LOST through sin and carnality and can be recovered by use of the rebound procedure.
  - iii. EVERY believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is MINUS Bible Doctrine
- 3. No believer has any overt manifestations of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit until there is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - i. The whole purpose of the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit is to facilitate the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine by the believer.
  - ii. Once this Metabolized Bible Doctrine reaches a significant level then we begin to get a balance of residence in the soul and God the Holy Spirit can then have overt manifestations in the life of the believer.
- 4. The purpose of God the Holy Spirit prior to reaching the balance of residence between Metabolized Bible Doctrine and Filling of God the Holy Spirit is to see that we continue to accumulate Bible Doctrine in the soul.
  - i. Worship, Concentration on Bible Doctrine and fulfilling basic priestly functions.
  - ii. Filling of God the Holy Spirit + maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine == Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace == Godliness == experiential sanctification.
  - iii. Godliness is based on God the Holy Spirit indwelling the body of the believer and it is the balance of residence in the soul of the believer he being under Filling of God the Holy Spirit and possessing maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - iv. This produces capacity for love life and happiness and blessing.

#### B. The Laws of Divine Establishment and human authority is needed for the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and resultant godliness **1Tim 2:2**

- 1. This is the prayer we need to remember in order that it might be fulfilled so that we might still have the freedom needed to take in Bible Doctrine without government interference

and frustrations for the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

2. We must avoid individual stupidity and distraction even psychological hangups about taking in Bible Doctrine at all costs.
3. Being a believer has responsibility in this life and we are NOT to run around in our life and get involved in various groups for social or political action of any kind NOR with any groups for witnessing or other "christian" groups.
4. Bible Doctrine is the ONLY ANSWER to any situation in life and for life in general.
5. WHAT YOU DO IN YOUR LIFE IS YOUR BUSINESS BEFORE THE LORD AND WHAT YOU MAY DO TO PREPARE FOR CATASTROPHE AND CRISIS IS TO BE TOTALLY CONSISTENT IN TAKING IN BIBLE DOCTRINE AND WADE THROUGH ALL THE PROBLEMS AND HANGUPS BEFORE YOU.

C. Godliness is related to FULL knowledge of Bible Doctrine **Tit 1:1**

D. Therefore Godliness DEMANDS discipline **1Tim 4:7**

1. This is done by consistent constant exposure to bible teaching and persistence in the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

E. Godliness is profitable for both time and eternity **1Tim 4:8**

1. This is tough hard Physical training which causes agony and takes great determination to keep it up.
2. Godliness is profitable for all things while this type of physical training is only profitable for a few things.

F. The basis for godliness is the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at the 1<sup>st</sup> advent **1Tim 3:16**

G. Godliness is distorted by reversionist under the influence of evil, **1Tim 6:3-5**

1. These people are under blind arrogant and have no understanding of any principles of doctrine.
2. Blind Arrogance is where Pride, Reversionism and EVIL all meet. **2Tim 3:2-5**
3. The only power of godliness is in the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

H. The great Gain of true godliness **1Tim 6:6**

1. This includes Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, Ultra Super Grace and dying grace with the capacity for life love and happiness.

I. Godliness is attained under the principle of living grace **2Pet 1:3**

J. Godliness is a christian virtue, **2Pet 1:6-7, 3:11**

IV. Today we have not fear of any disaster which may occur in this world despite having NO CONTROL over any disaster which may occur.

A. All we have is the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the only way to meet disaster and when we are saturated with Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul THEN we have followed the colors to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and have a command post in the soul and have received our Super Grace blessings in 5 categories:

1. Spiritual
2. Temporal
3. By association
4. Historical
5. Dying

V. The doctrine of Surpassing Grace:

A. Definition:

1. In **Eternity Past** as part of the divine decree and basis for glorifying God in the Angelic Conflict 2 special blessing paragraphs were designed by God the Father for EVERY believer
  - i. One is temporal

- ii. One is eternal
  - iii. Both are related to the believers growth in TIME.
  - iv. YOU DON'T GET ANY EXTRA BLESSINGS IN ETERNITY FOR THINGS WHICH WE DO IN ETERNITY.
  - v. Paragraph Super Grace 2 or SGII refers to Super Grace blessing for Phase II of the life of the believer IN TIME.
  - vi. This is blessing in time in 5 categories for the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - vii. Paragraph Super Grace III or SGIII refers to Surpassing Grace blessing for Phase III of the life of the believer which is blessing in eternity
  - viii. This is special blessing and reward for all eternity for the believer Phil 3:12-14 who reaches and HOLDS the Status Quo of Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace in time there is special blessing and rewards for him in eternity over and above what all other believers will enjoy in heaven
  - ix. There are DEGREES of blessing and rewards for heaven and the LOWEST degree is fantastic beyond imagination while the highest is far far beyond that.
  - x. Both are tied to the function we log under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - xi. What we do in time is for blessing in both time and eternity.
  - xii. EVERYONE gets blessing in eternity but the believer who is consistent in time with reference to function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception receives special blessing in eternity.
  - xiii. The mature believer is the Super Grace believer and Spiritual Maturity is based on maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - xiv. Surpassing Grace is the sum total of all rewards and blessings belonging to the believer in Phase III of his life that being in eternity.
2. Nomenclature: **Eph 2:7**
- i. Surpassing Grace Riches belong only to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
  - ii. It is the ultimate objective of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace living.
  - iii. It is the optimum in **Maximum Glorification of God**
  - iv. Anything which glorifies God results from his being able to provide for us maximum blessing in time or forever in eternity.
  - v. The GRACE ROAD which leads to this **Maximum Glorification of God** is:
    - a. Saving Grace to Living or Logistical Grace
    - b. Living or Logistical Grace to Super Grace
    - c. Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace
    - d. Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace to Dying Grace
    - e. Dying Grace to Surpassing Grace.
- B. The eternal holy city is designated as the surpassing grace blessing for those in past dispensations have reached Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace. **Heb 11;9-10, 16, 23, Acts 7:20, Rev 21:2, 10, 11**
- C. \*\*\* Crowns are used to designate surpassing grace rewards and blessing for the Royal Family of God in eternity.
- 1. At the time of writing the Roman military had the greatest system of rewards and decorations EVER.
    - i. No roman soldier who ever was decorated was ever ignored thereafter.
    - ii. He might lose his decoration but never lost his stipend either monthly or in mass.
  - 2. There was a variety of spectacular decorations for the soldier including:
    - i. Collars or Necklaces
    - ii. Arm Bands

- iii. Iron Discs worn on a leather harness strung over the body armor diagonally across the body.
  - iv. The highest decoration of all the “STEPHANOS” mistranslated CROWN
    - a. (gr) Diadem == CROWN
  - v. The Stephanos is a wreath of Gold woven with:
    - a. Gold Oak leaves
    - b. Gold Grass – The Highest
    - c. Gold Ivy
    - d. These are equivalent to our Medal of Honor.
  - vi. There were special decorations for officers including the Silver Spear head which was equivalent to an expert badge.
  - vii. These decorations all carried with them financial rewards and the Stephanos guaranteed at LEAST 50,000 per year until death.
  - viii. Libby writes about Spurious Ligostinus who lived a few hundred years before this passage and he had won 34 decorations in his 22 years and therefore had 1 medal of honor with 5 oak leaf clusters having one 6 Stephanos, This man was paid about 500,000 per year for his courage in his service.
  - ix. The Highest Decoration in the Stephanos was won by Julius Caesar in the Gallic Wars and he won all 3 of the Stephanos types of decorations
  - x. Caesar was so very courageous that they also gave him a title “Emperor” which meant he held already the highest decorations which Rome could give anyone.
  - xi. In the United States of America military when a private earns the medal of honor then everyone after that must initiate a salute with him no matter their rank.
  - xii. In military courtesy the medal of honor recipient is ranked higher than any other rank in the services and EVERYONE MUST initiate a salute to him.
3. Thus Stephanos being a military term is used for the highest decoration for the Royal Family of God.
- i. 3 of these decorations are found in the doctrines of the bible.
    - a. When a person receives the Stephanos he has the highest decoration for all eternity which he will never lose and which will glorify God forever.
    - b. Those who glorify God the most receive the highest decorations for eternity.
    - c. Cities are related to rewards for the Old Testament Scripture Super Grace believers
    - d. Stephanos is related to the rewards for those in the Church Age who Seize and hold the high ground of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God until DEATH.
  - ii. Stephanos of Life – James 1:12
    - a. This belongs to every believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and HOLDS this Status Quo until death.
  - iii. Stephanos of Glory – 1Pet 5:4, 1Thes 2:19-20, Phil 4:1
    - a. This is the highest decoration available to the Pastor Teacher and is a special decoration for faithfulness in communication of Bible Doctrine on the part of those with this spiritual gift.
    - b. It is inevitable that persistent faithful study of Bible Doctrine will lead to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace
  - iv. Stephanos of Righteousness –
    - a. It is for holding the ground of Super Grace and moving into Ultra Super Grace and involves another set of blessing and rewards for eternity.
- D. Heb 11:5-6 the key to your surpassing grace blessings is related to your attitude toward Bible Doctrine in time.

1. 2Cor 5:10 Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ will give these blessings to the believer in the future after he receives his Resurrection Body.
  - i. We are not to judge the Spiritual Life of any other believer but allow the lord to do so at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ.
2. 1Cor 3:11-16 a special reference to the crown of glory with reference to the Pastor Teacher.
3. Heb 6:7-12 the fact that the reversionistic believer will have NO reward in eternity minus all decorations
4. 2Tim 2:11-13 the reversionistic believer can lose both is Super Grace and surpassing grace blessings and arrive in eternity without any reward and some great fires burning up all his Human Good but CANNOT lose his salvation.
  - i. Loss of reward for eternity does not ever mean loss of SALVATION nor does loss of blessing in time mean this.
  - ii. These things mean you have missed something God had designed for you from **Eternity Past** in both time and in eternity.
5. 1Cor 9:24-27 the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ is dramatized by Paul.
  - i. The fact that you are a christian in time does not mean you will receive any blessing or reward or decoration in eternity
  - ii. The fact that you are born again does not mean you will have any blessing in eternity NOR in time.
  - iii. There might be total Divine Discipline in time and no decoration in eternity.

**Lesson #61      Series # 467      1Tim 4:9**

- I. Paul's Favorite Hymn:
  - A. Faithful is the word or Doctrine
    1. Fragment #1 == 1Tim 1:15 == Faithfulness of the word is related to saving grace thus a part of this hymn deals with Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
      - i. Faithfulness of Doctrine is related to honorable aspiration in becoming a Pastor Teacher guardian of a local church.
    2. I Tim 3:1
    3. Fragment #3 == I Tim 4:9 == Faithfulness of the word is related to the exhausting work of the function of the Pastor Teacher.
      - i. This reminds us that there is no spiritual growth nor advance apart from Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
      - ii. Our only attitude must be UNQUALIFIED ACCEPTANCE of What is taught from the scripture.
      - iii. Before you can digest any part of the doctrine taught from the scripture and make it part of your soul there MUST BE unqualified acceptance of that doctrine.
      - iv. In bible study classes you cannot ever allow people to get out of control since this violates the principle of unqualified acceptance of the doctrines being taught.
      - v. Unqualified acceptance is preceded by Good Manners, Concentration, Poise, Objectivity provided through the ministry of God the Holy Spirit.
  - B. Fragmentation of the Hymn:
    1. This fragment in v9 was a refrain sung by the congregation in recognition of the work and authority of their right Pastor Teacher.
    2. This phrase from this hymn represents what all members of the Royal Family of God must think about Bible Doctrine teaching, Unqualified Acceptance
    3. This represents the Mental Attitude of the believer who is under positive volition to Bible Doctrine and functions consistently under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
    4. This phrase represents the importance of Bible Doctrine in spiritual advance, growth and Blessing.

5. The next verse emphasizes the result of the consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  6. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the believers defense against apostasy, evil and reversionism and it is the result of maximum Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine leading to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and this believer is insulated against evil and reversionism.
- C. The Grace provision for learning Bible Doctrine:
1. There would be no possibility for anyone to ever learn ANY Bible Doctrine were it not for the gracious manner which God has provided for learning it.
  2. Formation and Preservation of the Canon of Scripture:
    - i. Without the completed canon and its PRESERVATION there would be no intake of Bible Doctrine no spiritual growth, no Super Grace blessings for time, no dying grace, no surpassing grace.
    - ii. Including the mechanics of inspiration and protection of God for the canon against all satanic attacks.
    - iii. Now we have in the 21<sup>st</sup> century we still have and intact canon preserved in the original languages with the same meanings and connotations as the day it was originally taught.
    - iv. For over a period of 2000 years we have what Paul originally wrote under the direct inspiration of God the Holy Spirit without any changes or variations.
  3. Divine authorization for a classroom for bible study:
    - i. This is called the local church today and is the place for assembly for all members of the Royal Family of God for learning Bible Doctrine in a specific geographic area.
    - ii. There will always be more than one local church in any area.
    - iii. The prescribed organization is simple:
      - a. Pastor Teacher as absolute ruler and policy maker
      - b. Deacons as administrators of the policy
      - c. Congregation to be benefited from the teaching of the word of God.
    - iv. All worship is centered around Bible Doctrine and during the assembly of the Royal Family of God to take in Bible Doctrine there must be VERY STRICT Academic Discipline.
    - v. Students or members of the Royal Family of God in bible class are without portfolio and must adhere to strict discipline from the beginning of the class to the last AMEN.
    - vi. This includes good manners, poise, objectivity, concentration without regard to any distractions.
    - vii. The continued existence of any local church in any generation is a matter of grace
    - viii. In spite of the fact that any given local church has failed in apostate generations and in spite of all the attacks against it and formation of Denominations and Service Organizations the local church continues to be the ONLY means of spiritual growth.
    - ix. When more than one WEAK churches have to get together the result is a denomination which immediately becomes an ABOMINATION since the autonomy concept and the individual Pastor Teacher having authority over the congregation is LOST.
    - x. God never changes his system despite any apostasy or failure on the part of the local churches generally in any generation.

- xi. GOD always provides where there is a demand for Bible Doctrine and he will provide and local church with a right Pastor Teacher who will communicate under expository teaching.
  - xii. This system remains the same until the Rapture of the Church.
4. Whenever there are people who have positive volition in a geographic area God will anticipate that by preparing and providing a right Pastor Teacher for that area.
- i. God can raise up a Pastor Teacher from anyone and it is simply a matter of wanting Bible Doctrine above all else.
  - ii. There is a preparation period and the spiritual gift is to communicate via MONOLOGUE.
  - iii. This spiritual gift is a grace gift and the man with this gift is not any better than anyone else and like every members of the Royal Family of God a manifestation of GRACE.
  - iv. This gift is restricted to male believers and is the sovereign decision of God the Holy Spirit mixed with a little divine humor and NO ONE in the Royal Family of God has any right to question the decision of God the Holy Spirit.
  - v. God the Holy Spirit picks for the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher all sorts of personalities and personality is NEVER an issue and each personality is attractive to some group of believers and there is no stereotype personality.
  - vi. This issue in the ministry is NEVER an issue and never will be.
  - vii. The issue in the ministry is having the spiritual gift, awareness of the spiritual gift, spiritual growth, intensive preparation and finally getting to a local church and this is a very LONG haul and it is GRACE in every way if a man makes it there.
  - viii. There is no such thing as entering into an emotional binge and having some sort of guilt reaction and “surrendering” to Preach.
  - ix. There is NO SUCH thing as dedication to “full time christian service” these being works projects and thus legalism and therefore have nothing to do with the GRACE provision of the Pastor Teacher.
  - x. Under consistent persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine certain male believers reach awareness of their having the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher totally apart from any emotional appeals or pseudo activity.
  - xi. From Awareness to fulfilling the function of Pastor Teacher there are MANY years of support from God
5. The fourth provision is the royal priesthood of the believer.
- i. In the Church Age the dispensation of the Royal Family of God there exists a universal royal priesthood.
  - ii. The purpose of this priesthood is for privacy and reception of Bible Doctrine.
  - iii. Each believer must put Metabolized Bible Doctrine into his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and also grow in grace through this intake therefore each royal priest must LIVE as unto the lord.
  - iv. To ensure his privacy and avoid bullying and give a chance to learn Bible Doctrine he enters a congregation sits down privately and receives his instruction with others of the same inclination.
  - v. There is no such thing as a “ONE ON ONE” teaching situation in any local church.
  - vi. For the Pastor Teacher STUDENT is his primary function.
  - vii. The principle is “LET BIBLE DOCTRINE DO IT AND IF DOCTRINE WON’T DO IT NOTHING WILL”.
  - viii. The Pastor Teacher has a great trap and often he becomes a crutch for people making their decisions and in fact living their life for them.



- ix. This is the pastor who runs around in his congregation and runs everyone's life for them.
  - x. As Royal Family of God being royalty we must stand on the principle of maintaining our personal privacy and our life is ours to LIVE AS UNTO THE LORD.
  - xi. The only way to fulfill Col 2:16 and live as unto the lord is to do so by listening to Bible Doctrine and let it become your inner dictator.
  - xii. Every royal priest must build his own altar of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his soul.
  - xiii. As per the example of Marie Antoinette we must as Royal Family of God always ACT like royalty and Aristocracy and our aristocracy is permanent and we MUST demonstrate the poise and manners and concentration of royalty.
6. Ministry of God the Holy Spirit:
- i. The aristocracy of the Royal Family of God is related to the ministry of God the Holy Spirit from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    - a. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God God the Holy Spirit enters us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ under the concept of Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
    - b. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God God the Holy Spirit is agent of regeneration as he was for ALL believer for ALL TIME.
    - c. We are spiritual aristocracy and entered into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ by the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and he became the agent of our royalty as well as our regeneration.
  - ii. God the Holy Spirit enters into our bodies and indwells the body of every believer.
    - a. This is our Escutcheon of royalty
    - b. He is our basis for SECURITY in our royalty.
    - c. God the Holy Spirit also has a ministry of controlling the soul of every believer called Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
    - d. We have a grace provision of REBOUND to perpetuate this Status Quo.
    - e. It is the Filling of God the Holy Spirit which makes our good manners and poise in bible class possible and he also is the basis for the Grace Apparatus for Perception and / or Operation Z in the metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
7. Provision of the Human Spirit.
- i. The Unbeliever born into this life has body and soul
  - ii. When the unbeliever uses his positive volition directed toward the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, he is regenerated by God the Holy Spirit who gives to him a new Human spirit.
  - iii. Adam lost his Human Spirit at the fall but recovered it by Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - iv. The human spirit acts like supercharger where perceived Bible Doctrine is taken from the Left Lobe of the Soul and transferred to the Right Lobe of the soul as Metabolized Bible Doctrine for application potential.
  - v. The human spirit is the means of processing that Bible Doctrine and bringing it into the Right Lobe of the soul and eventually putting it on the launching pad for application.
  - vi. This is the grace provision for assimilation and metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
  - vii. In the Grace Apparatus for Perception God the Holy Spirit bear witness to our Human Spirit and this is the mechanic of transferring Bible Doctrine into the Right Lobe.
8. The Laws of Divine Establishment

- i. The nation under these laws protects the freedom and privacy of the local church and is the importance of the principle of freedom through military victory and function of true proper **Law Enforcement** in a nation.
      - ii. The system of authority which exists under the Laws of Divine Establishment is the basis for orderly function in all aspects of society including the local church.
      - iii. Establishment **DEMANDS** respect for authority of all kinds and this focus' attention on the biblical teaching of the Pastor Teacher.
      - iv. Rejecting one type of authority results in rejecting authority of many others.,
    - 9. Human Anatomy:
      - i. All functions of anatomy are grace as they relate to intake of thought and Bible Doctrine and these are grace systems of assimilation of Bible Doctrine.
- D. For the Pastor Teacher his work is and must be Exhausting mostly in his studying and teaching.
  - 1. The most exhausting labor is mental labor of studying.
  - 2. Pushing the body to the limit physically is **NOTHING** compared to day in and day out constant study of the word of God.
  - 3. Despite Paul writing all the epistles in the New Testament Scripture except at this time Timothy 1-2 and Titus he continued to study constantly and working to exhaustion.
  - 4. Neither the Pastor Teacher nor the member of the congregation can grow up in the Spiritual Life unless he is persistent and consistent in his Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
  - 5. There are no short cuts for either and they both **MUST STUDY STUDY STUDY**.

**1Tim 4:9**

**v9: Faithful is the Word (a Favorite Hymn of Paul) and worthy of unqualified acceptance.**

**Lesson #62      Series # 467      1Tim 4:9**

- I. Principle of Evil in Life in the world ruled by Satan:
  - A. Never in the history of man have so many bleeding Heart Liberals been gathered together in one geographic location as in the United States of America **SINCE** at least 1975 when this lesson was taught.
    - 1. The fact is that the number today in 2017 has **FAR** exceeded any nightmare expectations which could have occurred in 1975.
    - 2. Never have there been so many confused people wondering why things are happening and what in fact **IS** happening
    - 3. The people in this nation are **SOFT** in the soul because we are under a maximum influence of **EVIL** the policy and system of Satan for ruling this world.
    - 4. **EVIL** is the sum total of the genius of Satan related to his **BLIND ARROGANCE**
    - 5. **EVIL** never has, is nor can ever work.
    - 6. We however in the United States of America continue to pursue a course of Evil in every facet of life.
    - 7. The welfare state of 1975 was the worst in history and there never was a good one and the one we have today supporting illegals and all other scum is **FAR FAR Worse**.
    - 8. The communists have welfare state functions **BUT** when they have people who cannot be used in society they **EXECUTE** them or put them in work camps to starve work and **DIE**.
  - B. The welfare state is a totally evil vicious system and creates out of the people in that state an incredible **CANCER** of people who are totally and completely **WORTHLESS** willing to do nothing as long as the government provides for them and **SCREAM** to the liberals who will listen about their rights if the does not provide for them.
    - 1. These people are **LEACHES** and the greater the number of leaches in a nation the faster a nation goes down in history.
    - 2. When leach population is encouraged by government handouts eventually they turn around and destroys the nation which feeds it.

3. This is HISTORICAL FACT and we have the largest leach population in history far greater than 1975.
  4. This population has great influence on the molding of thinking and policy and attitude in the nation BECAUSE we have allowed an expanded voting franchise.
  5. As a result of this people are shocked when terrorists strike, or nations destroy our embassaies, or nations use forbidden weapons on our soil or illegals just walk in take up residence and expect to be supported.
  6. We invite the smallest in the world to attack us but this may be changing.
- C. We allow this because of a lack of understanding that STRENGTH is the secret to freedom and world peace.
1. We are deluded with social gospel concepts and SATURATED WITH EVIL and because of this we have failed to understand in any way that we invite these disasters and BEG for small nations in south America and Africa to shake their fists in anger at the United States of America.
  2. We invite them by showing them that we are weak and pathetic and the great power which we had in 1945 is just a hollow shell today.
  3. We invite envy and violence and BEG for it in the manner in which we conduce out policy.
  4. Never has a nation had so much blessing and did not know what to do with it and it demonstrates a lack of national capacity for life.
  5. The fact that in 75 the Cambodians took a merchant ship and that terrorists bombed with planes the world trade center towers and that idiots constantly kill in mass innocent people on our streets and the elected officials are constantly wanting to get rid of guns and in fact repeal the 2<sup>nd</sup> amendment.
  6. If you do not have universal military training and do not show toughness and do not have realistic people in government and cater to LEACHES eventually you think like a LEACH and eventually you will be destroyed by a LEACH.
  7. When we have idiotic music like RAP and leaders who BOW to islamic leaders and cow tow to communist leaders, and our state department leaders leave our ambassadors to be killed when they could be saved and then this person has the unmitigated GAUL to think she is qualified to be president of the country and when the immediately past president was not even a citizen nor American in any semblance of the term.
  8. We have done everything needed to bring on the types of disasters we are seeing today and WE WILL SEE FAR MORE.
  9. We invite these national disaster and the same stupidity which invites national disaster is the same stupidity which gives the people in this nation NO CAPACITY for life.
  10. We have had for many decades generation after generation of IMBECILES hatched by generation after generation of LEACHES.
- D. This is why it is a shock to realize that the application of Bible Doctrine CALLS for TOUGHNESS and COMPASSION
1. The problem is being tough and compassionate at the same time is confusing and difficult and it in fact depends on WHICH DOCTRINE you use for which application.
  2. Just because we have a great number of believers in this country does not mean they have doctrine or if they do have it know which to use in which situation.
  3. They don't generally know when to be tough and when to be compassionate.
  4. Once you straighten out this principle of when to be tough and compassionate, aggressive and non aggressive, speak and not speak, then you learn the principle in Ecclesiastes that there is a time for everything.
  5. There is a time for war and when that is the time it is then this is GOOD
  6. There is time for peace and when that is the time it is then this is GOOD
  7. There is a time to LOVE
  8. There is a time to FIGHT

9. Fundamental Christians have generally lost the understanding of variations in doctrines and we must maintain flexibility in dealing with all facets of life and applying doctrine properly.

II. What we have studied so far in Timothy 4

- A. We have studied HOW EVIL gets started
- B. We have looked at Ascetic Legalism and gained some applications from it.
  1. How important it is to PRAY over FOOD BEFORE YOU EAT IT.
  2. There are 4 ways to foul your life up with the wrong WIDOW!!!!
  3. There is a time to get tough, to be sweet, to be MEAN as much as possible.
- C. It is always true that people stick their noses in to other people's business when they do not understand it just as the Yankees did to the South, despite the south carrying the nation for many many years.
  1. Now the north is just catching up with the thinking of the south from about 100 years prior.
- D. This passage is filled with incredible applications:
  1. We have dealt with the Pastor Teacher and his incredible responsibilities.
  2. The point is that the Pastor Teacher must constantly study and teach to the point of exhaustion.
  3. Timothy is a mealy mouthed wimpy spouting pleasantries coward and NO pastor who does his job right is going to be like this with honey sweet words spewing from his mouth and spreading charm all over everyone trying to make his congregation LOVE him.
  4. The Pastor Teacher is never commanded to try to win popularity but is there to do a JOB and he cannot do the job and be sweet to people.
  5. There is a time to be sweet but NO Pastor Teacher can ever be SWEET and if he has the natural tendency to be sweet he MUST HIDE IT.
  6. There is no place in the ministry for sweetness because PEOPLE LOOK AT SWEETNESS IN ANOTHER PERSON AND RUN ALL OVER THEM.
  7. This is what has happened to the United States of America when they give money, equipment and other support away to nations to gain their friendship but they still hate us.
  8. Bible Doctrine will allow the believer to see through sweetness and realize that 90% of sweetness in people is a facade and these people WANT something from you even if it is ONLY approbation.
- E. Paul here is saying that they keep on contending, fighting in Angelic Conflict combat by studying and teaching without end.
  1. The Pastor Teacher must get into this routine and stay there and when he handles his congregation he must be TOUGH because any sign of being NICE is considered by the average human as weakness.
  2. This is the person who is sweet to everyone and thinks that doing things for others and helping others with their difficulties or problems or even simple things they cannot do for themselves is the right thing to do and this is the person who cannot say NO to anyone and neglects the responsibilities they have toward those their "loved ones" because they cannot be unkind nor say NO when someone asks them for something but in fact IGNORES when their loved one asks them to do something or they are late for appointments with them because of being SWEET or helping OTHERS.
  3. This person was sold a bill of goods thinking loving the brethren means being sweet to obnoxious people.
    - i. This is being sweet to the average person who has an area of blind arrogance where when someone speaks softly or in kind or is a gentleman they think he is a push over.
  4. There is no such thing as LOVE without Character and Integrity and people who are constantly SWEET have neither.

- i. This country has lost its character and integrity and we could see it clearly when we FAILED to help the Hungarians against the communists when they begged us to do so.
    - ii. Character and integrity says COMMUNISM is EVIL so we will help but we never did and in fact BACKED DOWN like the yellow coward people we are.
  - 5. People have a difficult time with this because they have heard too many pastors talk about LOVE with dulcet tones and with sweetness oozing from them.
    - i. There is a legitimate love but it is based on character, integrity, Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, Filling of God the Holy Spirit but it does not mean you have to be a sweet jackass and allow yourself to be pushed around.
    - ii. This love is a Relaxed Mental Attitude and freedom from implacability, vindictiveness, jealousy, pettiness and all Mental Attitude Sins.
    - iii. This is true love and it is also HONOR and INTEGRITY.
- F. The Pastor Teacher keeps on fighting and hanging in their tough by his consistent studying and teaching.
  - 1. The Pastor Teacher in the combat of the Angelic Conflict must have ABSOLUTE CONFIDENCE in the Living God, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - 2. The true motivator for the Pastor Teacher and for the congregation MUST be Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ which comes from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

### III. Doctrine of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:

- A. This is the secret to all honorable motivation in the Royal Family of God, to integrity, to capacity for love, life and happiness and God and GRACE.
- B. Definition and Description:
  - 1. It is the highest spiritual function of the Royal Family of God in time.
    - i. It is CATEGORY I love carried on by the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God:
  - 2. There are 3 categories of Love for the believer:
    - i. Cat I -- Toward God
    - ii. Cat II -- Toward Right Man or Right Woman
    - iii. Cat III -- Toward others in Friendship
  - 3. Loving the Brethren is NOT love in this classification at all but simply a Relaxed Mental Attitude toward all the Royal Family of God.
  - 4. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ reaches a peak in the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - 5. This Bible Doctrine in the soul causes the believer to have maximum love toward God and the manifest person of the trinity is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ thus Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is a synonym for maximum Cat I Love.

#### Deut 6:5, Heb 12:1-2

- 6. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as God/man prince ruler, unique in the universe, King of Kings, Lord of Lords our only savior, our High priest, demands nothing LESS than maximum LOVE but you cannot do this without MAXIMUM Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - i. This can only be accomplished by consistently taking in Bible Doctrine which is consistently taught by a Pastor Teacher.
- C. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ begins at the point of entrance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Super Grace:
  - 1. This can only occur from maximum positive volition toward Bible Doctrine and consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

#### Col 3:16-17

2. The mature believer MUST live his life as unto the lord and cannot live his spiritual life leaning on others and must make his own decisions from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  3. When you ask others for assistance in your Spiritual Life you have demonstrated WEAKNESS which can then be exploited by Satan.
- D. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ also Glorifies Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ **Eph 3:19-21**
1. The glory in the church comes from Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- E. The means of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
1. This is the intake of Bible Doctrine through the spiritual grace system set up by God.
  2. Persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine accumulates maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  3. This is the basis for Spiritual Maturity known also as Super Grace which begins with the principle of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ maximum Cat I Love

**Jer 9:23-24, Eph 4:20, 3:18-19**

4. There is no reason for anyone to boast about any thing he has or has done in life.
  5. He is to boast in his UNDERSTANDING of Bible Doctrine and PROSPERING from that Bible Doctrine.
  6. When people get involved doing things in the local church such as programs or group efforts or even administrative things they stop learning Bible Doctrine and are preoccupied with functional things.
  7. Prosperity is BASED ON KNOWLEDGE, LEARNING of Bible Doctrine
  8. First you learn and understand Bible Doctrine then you will prosper and then you will know God.
  9. The Lord is the one who manufactures, GRACE, JUDGMENT and JUSTICE.
    - i. Grace is the Super Grace blessings of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in 5 categories of prosperity
    - ii. Judgment is for the believer in reversionism under the influence of evil and instead of blessing he gets judgment and Divine Discipline in time and ALL OF HIS DISCIPLINE is in time.
    - iii. Justice is for the function of the Laws of Divine Establishment.
      - a. Where there is not function of the Laws of Divine Establishment the nation disintegrates and is removed from history.
  10. Eph 3:18 says that no one learns except in a classroom where Bible Doctrine is taught.
    - i. This is at least 3 believers under the authority of some Pastor Teacher.
    - ii. We in the Royal Family of God live in the palace of the Church Age and the only thing which will get us into the Modus Operandi of royalty is consistent concentration on Bible Doctrine day in and day out.
- F. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ eliminates superficialities of human celebrity-ship

**Phil 3:7-8**

1. No one walks through piles of Doggy Doo Doo!!!! ON purpose
2. Paul with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine takes toward HUMAN Celebrity-ship.
3. When you are in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and Sharing the Happiness of God and everything in the 5 categories of your blessing, HUMAN Celebrity-Ship means nothing.
4. Celebrity-ship is based on satanic standards of EVIL and as a mature believer we cannot get away from these things fast enough.

5. GOD is the one who is going to:
  - i. prosper you
  - ii. Provide for you in time of disaster
  - iii. Bless you in time of prosperity OR disaster more than anyone else.
  - iv. No matter the historical status quo WE DO NOT OWE SATAN ANYTHING.
  - v. Because this blessing comes from the omnipotent God it makes everything else LOOK LIKE PILES OF DUNG.

G. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ also motivates the Pastor Teacher to communicate Bible Doctrine so that the Royal Family of God can reach its objective

### Heb 6:10

1. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is very important to both the Pastor Teacher and congregation and the means of their moving to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

H. The mechanics of the Grace Apparatus for Perception produce the dynamics of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:

### James 1:19, 21, 2:20-23

I. The illustration of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is found in the doctrine of Right Man / Right Woman.

1. We are to love our wife as Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ loved the church, the Royal Family of God.
2. We must nourish and provide tender care for them.
3. The relationship between the Right Man and his Right Woman is the illustration and the same as the relationship between the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
4. NOT every marriage is a LOVE marriage and about 1 out of 50,000 is.
5. AND Every believer is NOT under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ but when he is he is in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
6. The analogy holds up to the numbers of believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace as well.
7. There are very few Super Grace believers and they are the ones under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

J. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is related to the strategic victory of the Angelic Conflict:

### Col 3:1-2

1. As Royal Family of God we should be desiring to possess the ultimate of Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.
2. Our life is not what you do but what you THINK and we must think Bible Doctrine NOT EVIL of the Cosmic Dynaspere.

K. Characteristics of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:

1. It is the basis for the believer in Super Grace contributing to the blessing of the nation.
  - i. This applies to each and every single Super Grace believer. **Deut 30:15-16, 20**
  - ii. Believers under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ are believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and the salt of the earth.
2. Produces combat courage and victory in battle, **Josh 23:10-11**

### Josh 23:10-11

v10: **One, believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, puts to flight a thousand of enemy soldier, for the LORD your God is he who fights for you, just as he promised you.**

v11: **Therefore, Take careful heed to yourselves, that you love the LORD your God.**

3. Basis for preservation in time of testing, **Ps 31:23-24**
4. It is the basis for extreme stability and happiness **Ps 16:8-9**
5. It results in Super Grace blessings **Ps 37:4-5**

6. It is the basis for strength under pressure **Heb 11:27**
7. Avoids fatigue **Heb 12:3**

**Lesson #63      Series # 467      1Tim 4:10**

- I. The Principle of SALT in the land as the mature believer in the nation who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and established the command post in the soul.
  - A. GOD always honors the principle of SALT.
  - B. Freedom and especially free enterprise for this nation **MUST** continue and it including freedom principles through military and **Law Enforcement** function is the very vigor of this nation.
  - C. The great issues which we fact in this country is **EVIL** which includes the principles of:
    1. Greater good for the greater number
    2. Welfare state functions
    3. Socialism
    4. All Anti establishment principles
    5. SPQR lasted for 500 years but was destroyed by not following the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  - D. This is the benefit of the for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- II. Confidence in the **LIVING** God:
  - A. This is based on knowledge of Bible Doctrine as Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    1. Also based on capacity for Cat I Love from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    2. Understanding God, History and how Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls **Human History**
  - B. All this is the basis for our confidence in God.
  - C. There never has been, nor will be a time when Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ has not been savior of all mankind
  - D. The Work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross:
    1. Man is sinful and evil and incapable of saving self to enter relationship with God.
    2. God is perfection with Absolute Righteousness and cannot affiliate with sin in any way.
    3. Since Man is a sinner God looks on sin and says sin must be judged and condemned to death.
    4. On the cross Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ by accepting the imputation of all human sin and bearing them in his own body for judgment resulted in a propitiation of God the Father who is satisfied with that sacrifice.
    5. Man therefore has the potential for reconciliation with God and the only requirement is expression of positive volition in that direction.
  - E. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross was judged for **ALL** Human Kind
- III. Doctrine of the Atonement:
  - A. Definition:
    1. Atonement refers to the efficacious work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross on behalf of all mankind.
    2. Atonement as a noun means reconciliation after Enmity of controversy.
    3. It means satisfaction or reparation made for a wrong or injury
    4. The verb to Atone means:
      - i. To be at one
      - ii. To be in accordance with
      - iii. To make amends or reparations
      - iv. To make up for errors or deficiencies
      - v. To reconcile or bring into fellowship.



5. In the Old Testament Scripture (heb) Kaphar == to cover used when on the day of atonement the high priest would carry blood of the sacrifices into the holy of holies to the Ark which contained the objects of FAILURE but were covered in the box of the Arc.
  - i. Review the Ark construction and the analogy between the cherubs and the Integrity of God.
  - ii. In Old Testament Scripture times God forgave or restored where sins were covered by the blood of sacrifices.
  - iii. The animal sacrifices portrayed the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross in true atonement.
6. In the New Testament Scripture Atonement means the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.

### **Rom 3:21-26**

7. Anyone who believes in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ can be declared righteous based on his faith.
  8. It is the efficacious saving work in Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
- B. Atonement is UNLIMITED
1. This means that when Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was judged on the cross for all human sins God the Father was satisfied with his sacrifice.
    - i. Every sin ever committed in the whole history of man into the future were all imputed to and judged in him.
    - ii. The bible always expresses Unlimited **1Tim 2:6, 1Tim 4:10**
    - iii. Review the Essence of God and Essence of the Human Soul.
  2. At the Great White Throne judgment NO sins are ever mentioned and only the Human Good and Evil which the person is involved in will ever be judged in comparison to the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the propitiation of God the Father thereby.
- C. Works is Man by his own efforts trying to impress God.
1. These works are the basis for indictment of the unbeliever at the last judgment BECAUSE the bible teaches unlimited atonement
  2. When Christ died in substitution on the cross he died for EVERYONE.
- D. The unbeliever is indicted at the last judgment because he did not believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ while on earth.
1. Those who believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ are never judged
  2. Those who reject Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ are tried and convicted and sentenced at the last judgment having rejected the only salvation.
  3. The issue is FAITH ALONE in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- IV. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ died a Substitutionary Spiritual Death for ALL humans but ONLY those who express faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ are beneficiaries of this Substitutionary Spiritual Death.
- A. Only those who believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ have Eternal Life and benefit from unlimited atonement.
  - B. The quality of Man who believes in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is Royal Family of God.
- V. Conclusion:
- A. While Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the potential savior of the entire Human Race he is the REAL savior of those who believe.
  - B. The Pastor Teacher who works to the point of exhaustion with constant persistent plodding in studying and teaching is emphasized because Salvation means a royal family which means the necessity for spiritual growth which comes only from the teaching of Bible Doctrine.

- C. As a result of this process of communication of Bible Doctrine in the local church the believer royal priest becomes mature and in the Status Quo of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- D. This is Cat I Love for God or Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - 1. At this same time we receive Super Grace blessings.
  - 2. This also protects the Royal Family of God from APOSTASY, EVIL, Reversionism, Bleeding Heart Liberals, Religious fanatics, ETC.
- E. Protection from apostasy and blessing are 2 sides of the same coin from God.
  - 1. Blessing from God == God keeping us in this life after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God for this purpose when we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- F. This v10 anticipates the next paragraph where the Pastor Teacher in his teaching ministry counter attacks apostasy.
- G. In the Angelic Conflict defense is NOT enough and Defense never wins anything.
  - 1. There must be OFFENSIVE action to win.
  - 2. A GOOD Defense is simply a base for launching an offensive
    - i. This was our failure in Vietnam along with political cowardice and social treason.
  - 3. Our last successful army was in WWII where the army of 11 million men had the standing order to ATTACK and be aggressive
  - 4. The men in this army learned to be aggressive in the Depression and had to be aggressive in order to JUST SURVIVE.
  - 5. This is where we have received our freedom even till today.
  - 6. The politicians in our nation are yellow bleeding heart do good liberals and total cowards and have NO leadership.
  - 7. Americanism is Aggressiveness, Nerve, Leadership, Courage, Boldness, HONOR, Stability and Integrity.
  - 8. In the Christian Way of Life the aggressiveness must come from the Pastor Teacher who hangs in there and teaches Bible Doctrine constantly and consistently.
- H. In the Angelic Conflict defense merely consolidates for the counter offensive.
- I. To win a victory the Royal Family of God in each generation MUST take the offensive and Attack and this is only possible with the Pastor Teacher communicates Bible Doctrine and the congregation responds to it with positive volition and they move to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

#### 1Tim 4:10

**v10: For because of this benefit from function daily with spiritual exercise, under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and the resultant Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, we both continuously labor mentally, becoming weary and tired from mental concentration working hard to exhaustion and keep on contending, fighting in conflict and Angelic Conflict combat, because we have and constantly continue to have absolute confidence in the living God, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, who keeps on being the Savior of all men, most of or above all, especially believers.**

#### **Lesson #64      Series # 467      1Tim 4:11**

- I. Doctrine of Category I Love:
  - A. Definition:
    - 1. Love comes in 3 categories :
      - i. Cat I == toward God
      - ii. Cat II == Romance toward Right Man or Right Woman
      - iii. Cat III == toward others in friendship
    - 2. In addition there is an obligatory love toward all members of the Royal Family of God called Loving the brethren.
    - 3. Cat I Love == Believers capacity to LOVE GOD and respond to God based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

- i. It is the capacity based on Bible Doctrine and in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace this is Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - ii. Command for Cat I Love Deut 6:5
  - iii. It is impossible to achieve any capacity for loving God apart from Bible Doctrine
  - iv. Bible Doctrine is the source of knowledge of God and you cannot love someone you do not KNOW.
- B. Means of Category I Love:
  - 1. Since God is invisible and at the same time the object of Cat I love we must see and love him through the information in Bible Doctrine resident in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - 2. The reversionist is incapable of loving God lacking Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul therefore lacks knowledge of God and capacity for love and resides in the Cosmic Dynasphere under the policy of Satan called EVIL.
  - 3. The immature believer cannot love God he also lacking pertinent Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - 4. You cannot have doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul without use of the Grace Apparatus for Perception daily. **1Pet 1:8, Eph 3:18-19, Heb 6:10**
  - 5. You can study the bible on your own or do "readings" and that is acceptable but you cannot ever advance in the Spiritual Life in that way.
  - 6. You never advance beyond what you do not know and God has set up the Spiritual Life so that we must depend on our RIGHT Pastor Teacher to grow in the Spiritual Life.
  - 7. You cannot read the book of the bible and be an expert in that area.
  - 8. You can by reading a book become expert in many things but NOT in the area of Bible Doctrine. **2Tim 1:13-14,**
- C. Cat I Love sets up a standard for grace **Ps 119:132, Ps 31:23,**
- D. Cat I Love is the basis for Super Grace blessing **1Cor 2:9 (Is 64:4), Ps 37:4-5**
  - 1. There is a direct relationship between maximum Category I Love for God, Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the blessings of Super Grace.
  - 2. Be concentrated and occupied with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and he will give you the maximum Super Grace blessings and HE Will do all that is needed to provide you with blessing totally apart from the Cosmic Dynasphere system of Satan.
- E. Cat I Love is the basis for both personal and national blessing **Deut 30:15-16,**
  - 1. Every nation in history can choose between Life and prosperity vs Death and Adversity.
  - 2. Attitude toward Bible Doctrine is the key for the believer and the nation as a whole.
- F. Cat I Love motivates combat courage and military victory. **Josh 23:10-11**
- G. Cat I Love provides strength in adversity and pressure. **Heb 11:27, 12:3**
- H. There is a special curse on believers who fail under Cat I Love **1Cor 16:22**
  - 1. There is a special curse on every generation and believer who fails under Cat I Love and it is for them to be cursed until the rapture takes place.
- I. Witnessing must be motivated by Cat I Love **2Cor 5:14**
  - 1. Today there is false motivation created by WITNESSING ORGANIZATIONS and this distorts witnessing today.
  - 2. They work for approbation lust or some sort of point system or social life associations.
- J. The description of Cat I Love **1John 4:15-19**
  - 1. We know about the Love of God from function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception
  - 2. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ came into the world apart from the influence of EVIL and did not depend on it in any way nor owe anything to its creator in any way and this is the Status Quo in which we find ourselves in this world.
  - 3. The only difference is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was MINUS the Old Sin Nature and we have the Old Sin Nature.

4. There is NO Fear in Cat I Love and this drives out fear from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
5. Super Grace also casts out fear and Cat I love actually in only really available to the Super Grace believer.
6. The Super Grace believer is not afraid of anything except slipping away from Super Grace.

## II. Pastor Guardian in the counter Attack v11-16

A. The Modus Operandi of the Pastor Teacher here is the key to the counter offensive and it is communication of Bible Doctrine by the Pastor Teacher.

1. There is emphasis on the Bible Doctrine taught by your right Pastor Teacher in the local church.
2. There is nothing more important in the thinking of your soul than to realize how important is the teaching of Bible Doctrine by your right Pastor Teacher.
3. The Pastor Teacher cannot give ORDERS unless he has thorough preparation to do so.
  - i. The ability to give the right order in any profession is to understand that profession totally.
  - ii. This applies to all professions.
4. Giving a proper command always requires knowledge and understanding here it is the Royal Family of God and Pastor Teacher function.
5. The Pastor Teacher cannot do this without diligent study of Bible Doctrine.
6. Timothy has the rank but NOT the ability to give orders YET!.
7. Authority demands the ability to make good decisions and these result in giving good ORDERS
8. Timothy must command attendance to hear Bible Doctrine and then concentration with good manners in the congregation, poise, thoughtfulness of others, restraint from disturbing others.
9. The pastor must start by demanding these things to prevent bad apples from spoiling the congregation.
10. The Pastor Teacher must command obedience and concentration on the word of God.
11. In the mechanics the pastor has the right and authority to demand certain things from his congregation.
  - i. Privacy for each member and this should be emphasized and every person should be able to come to the local church and remain totally private.
  - ii. The pastor must be very firm about gossip and maligning and when one starts into this it is a good reason to throw them out of the local church.

B. Timothy and every Pastor Teacher has a right and in fact a duty here being commanded by Paul to do these things in their congregations so that no one can take over the leadership of the congregation and lead them away from sound Bible Doctrine.

1. The teaching of the Pastor Teacher from the pulpit is NOT sharing but there is one in control who teaches and the students are without portfolio and the opinions of the students is NOT important and communication is by the policy maker the Pastor Teacher.
2. This is one man communicating to a group under strict academic discipline.
3. This is to be what is expected to habitually occur by the Pastor Teacher in his local church.
4. When local churches get into denominations this is a subtle but strong attack on didosko or teaching Bible Doctrine
5. As long as there is 1 Pastor Teacher in a local church and he has one congregation it is much more simple to concentrate on communication of Bible Doctrine and the receiving of Bible Doctrine.
6. As soon as a Pastor Teacher becomes part of the denomination he no longer takes HIS policy from the word of God but from the denominational organization and inevitably the denomination gets a policy system which is in opposition to Bible Doctrine.

7. Eventually the Pastor Teacher becomes a clergyman in his denomination, even though he may know and understand the truth, He spends most of his time disseminating the policy of the denomination and thus is hamstrung in teaching Bible Doctrine and his congregation never advances to Super Grace.
8. The Pastor Teacher must focus on Bible Doctrine and communicate this and NOT the policy of some greater organization.

C. Principles:

1. This verse is made of 2 verbs which give 2 public functions of the Pastor Teacher.
  - i. The first is His use of authority to focus attention of the congregation on his teaching
  - ii. The second is His authority being used to actually communicate Bible Doctrine.
  - iii. In teaching Bible Doctrine both authority and communication are involved.
  - iv. NO Pastor Teacher can teach without authority
  - v. His communication of Bible Doctrine is MONOLOGUE
  - vi. There is no place for sharing or DIALOGUE
  - vii. The Pastor Teacher is the only one who has the authority to communicate therefore his policies and opinions based on Bible Doctrine are the only ones which count.
  - viii. It is blind arrogance to try to help or straighten out the Pastor Teacher and his teaching.
  - ix. We are in the local church to get what the Pastor Teacher is teaching not vice versa.
  - x. Every member of the congregation MUST have confidence in the judgment of the Pastor Teacher or MOVE ON.
  - xi. Many people in a congregation are alive ONLY to test others and may not ever learn anything from a Pastor Teacher.
  - xii. The congregation is to get the message and they don't have to like any other personal thing about him or his personality.
  - xiii. In the matter of professional judgment YOU MUST HAVE CONFIDENCE IN HIS ABILITIES IN HIS FIELD.
  - xiv. In any area in life you must have confidence in the one who is advising you.
  - xv. The pastor need not explain anything he does in any area.
2. Timothy must start using his RANK and he has the rank of general and is acting like a private.

D. V12 the authority and leadership of the Pastor Teacher in this counter attack

1. Everyone has contempt for or despises the authority of Timothy or any Pastor Teacher.
2. Often people try to disregard to have contempt for a leader who is YOUNG, See Napoleon.
3. If you cannot respect your Pastor Teacher then go find one whom you do respect, not someone who you like but one with content and organization.
4. You have to respect the message and have confidence in what they speak of with regard to Bible Doctrine.
5. If you cannot find it where you are then LOOK another place.

E. Older people have a tendency to look down on the authority of those YOUNGER than they are.

1. The Pastor Teacher must not be pushed around by the congregation but must exercise his authority properly for teaching of Bible Doctrine to occur effectively.
2. This is an appeal to the volition of Timothy and all Pastor Teachers to become an example or pattern or model for the congregation
3. No 2 people have commonality in any things in life but IN DOCTRINE the Pastor Teacher must be an example.
4. What the Pastor Teacher does when he leaves the pulpit is NO DAMNED BUSINESS OF ANYONE IN THE CONGREGATION.

5. What the Pastor Teacher does when behind the pulpit is totally the business of the congregation.
  6. What the Pastor Teacher wears, does, thinks, drives, lives in, says is between HIM and the Lord and it is the same thing for every believer.
  7. The Pastor Teacher must have a certain amount of privacy in his life.
  8. To be an example the Pastor Teacher is a pattern ONLY with reference to the Bible Doctrine he teaches.
  9. YOU cannot and should not try to pattern your lifestyle after your Pastor Teacher.
- F. The Pastor Teacher should lead the advance of the congregation in the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception having the greatest inner resources of Bible Doctrine through his own diligent and sacrificial study of Bible Doctrine.
1. The Pastor Teacher should not because of this become a counselor.
  2. When the Pastor Teacher becomes a counselor he then begins to LEAD and LIVE your life.
  3. When the Pastor Teacher makes judgment calls for many people this is wrong and in fact EVIL totally out of line with proper function.
  4. As a member of the Royal Family of God you do not need counseling by anyone but you do need Bible Doctrine and if you are unsure about a principle of Bible Doctrine then stay with it and depend on your own inner resources of Bible Doctrine in order to make decisions.
  5. This is how you build up spiritual strength through listening to the teaching of Bible Doctrine to establish the inner command post and dictator of the soul and all your counseling must come from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in your own soul.
  6. When you answer your own questions from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul you are 1000% ahead.
- G. Summary:
1. Purity of mind through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul means that Bible Doctrine must be the motivator of the Pastor Teacher just as for all members of the Royal Family of God.
  2. Through purity of mind from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the Pastor Teacher establishes his authority in the Local Church without abusing his authority or bullying.
  3. Abuses that a Pastor Teacher could fall into include:
    - i. Blind Arrogance
    - ii. Approbation Lust
    - iii. Omnivorous ambition of young Pastor Teachers.
      - a. Writing books
      - b. Tape ministries
      - c. ETC.
  4. Most Pastor Teachers today want to start at the top with publishing of books and tape ministries and become great in the public eye and are not students of the word by any imagination.
    - i. The Pastor Teacher does not become a student of the word until about 10 or 15 years of study have passed.
    - ii. These people lead with their ambition and lust for approbation and this is what destroys them.
  5. No Pastor Teacher can properly exercise authority over the congregation without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul producing purity of motivation which completely neutralizes Pride, Ambition, Jealousy, vindictiveness, pettiness, implacability, and academic dishonesty.

v11: (Timothy / All Pastor Teachers) Give orders, Command, Instruct and communicate these doctrines from the scripture. 1Tim 4:12

v12: stop permitting anyone to look down on, reject, despise, scorn, treat with contempt, disregard your authority, because you are young, but keep on becoming a pattern, model or example to believers in high quality principles of doctrine and a grace way of life, in virtue love of a Relaxed Mental Attitude and Filling of God the Holy Spirit, by means of Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in the sphere of purity of mind from occupation with Bible Doctrine leading to Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

**Lesson #65                      Series # 467                      1Tim 4:12, Luke 11:**

- I. There is in our country today through election liberals in all aspects of our government which have attacked all systems of liberty in our nation in 1975 and this will destroy all our freedoms and it has gotten worse today and that is GUN CONTROL and even GUN CONFISCATION.
  - A. This would end all our constitutionally protected rights.
    1. Letters from the NRA and Congress, CCRKBA
    2. Today in 2018 we even have people who are trying to instigate the repeal of the 2<sup>nd</sup> amendment, this is supported by liberal billionaires and other public celebrities.
  - B. This is part of EVIL which allegedly for the greater good for the greatest number a principle of freedom is destroyed.
    1. However one member of congress today has entered a bill which would FINE all people who did not own firearms.
    2. The registration of handguns in Czechoslovakia, Yugoslavia, Hungary all had registration as did Germany and Austria and immediately after registration communists took over the first 3 and Nazis too over the last 2 and it also occurred in Poland as well.
    3. This is great introduction with regard to FAILED gun control efforts and the stupidity of it all.
  - C. Principles:
    1. The 2<sup>nd</sup> amendment to the constitution of the United States of America declares 2 things:
      - i. There will be UNIVERSAL military training of the citizenry in the form of a Militia
        - a. This has NEVER been carried out ever in our history
      - ii. Every Law Abiding Citizen has the right to possess and own firearms of their choosing.
    2. When a national, state or local government pass ANY Laws prohibiting the possession or use of firearms by law abiding citizens the law has been distorted into a system of tyranny and this is a direct attack on every freedom we have.
      - i. Freedom to go into business for profit
      - ii. Freedom of press, worship, expression in free speech ETC.
      - iii. As goes this principle so will go every principle of freedom related to evangelism and spiritual growth and all freedom of all individual citizens in this nation.
    3. Satan the ruler of this world is constantly attacking the Laws of Divine Establishment and all categories of Bible Doctrine.
    4. Out of the so called 40, (120 today in 2018) million people in this country who possess firearms less than 1% have ever used them for any type of CRIME.
      - i. This is a perfect record which demonstrates if you have law abiding society and good Law Enforcement people can and do possess weapons without any detriment to that society.
    5. When law protects the criminal instead of the law abiding citizen as it does in the case of gun legislation that law becomes EVIL, Immoral, Apostate and degenerate.
      - i. It violates the principles under which law was devised under the Laws of Divine Establishment principles.
    6. Gun control laws never remove guns from the criminals simply disarming the law abiding citizen making them vulnerable to crime, helpless in the face of the criminal and intensifying police work to the point of total failure.

7. Every communist take over of a western European nation was preceded by the registration and confiscation of firearms
  - i. Criminals and communists are for gun control laws because it makes their job much easier.
8. Example is the Sullivan law of NYC which has a mandatory 1 year penalty for possession of a firearm without a permit and those who protect themselves by use of firearms from murder, rape or robbery or any violence.
9. A disarmed citizenry is a HELPLESS citizenry and makes invasion potential for other nation much easier.
10. Today the law abiding citizen in the United States of America is the victim of vicious propaganda from Evil, Apostasy and Reversionism.
11. The law instead of protecting the freedom, privacy and property of the law abiding citizen it destroys it.
  - i. Anti gun legislation is the key which will put the plug out of the dyke and allow the dam of freedom to crumble before the liberals.
  - ii. This legislation illustrates the principle that business, medicine, military, education who are NOW victims will become even greater victims (and this has been demonstrated beyond any doubt in the succeeding 40+ years)
12. Killing is a matter of volition of the soul and like all sins MURDER is a matter of free will NOT weapons.
  - i. Weapons can be a means but this will not stop murder or crime
  - ii. If you remove one means then volition will find other means.
  - iii. One of the greatest doctrinal principles is: "Sin is a matter of the Old Sin Nature hooked up with Volition".
  - iv. You may not know a thing is a sin but you wanted to do it and are GUILTY in the eyes of God.
  - v. It is not the weapon which prevents or causes crime it is the control of the Old Sin Nature and volition through the Laws of Divine Establishment functions.
  - vi. You cannot stop crime and violence by the means used to perpetrate them whether it is Guns, Knives, Ice Picks, Tire Tools, or bare hands.
  - vii. You cannot legislate the Old Sin Nature out of existence.
13. Guns are used by criminals who are criminals because they CHOOSE to NOT OBEY THE LAWS.
  - i. So what effect will gun legislation logically have on one who has decided to live by breaking the law? NONE.
  - ii. This will simply give him a greater advantage in crime.
14. Only the law abiding citizens are disarmed by anti gun legislation NOT EVER the criminal.
  - i. Always those under the influence of evil feel that the private citizen has no business with weapons.

**Prov 6:9-11**

**v9: How long, Oh Citizen, will you lie down, O sluggard (public opinion)? When will you arise from your sleep?**

**v10: A little sleep, a little slumber, a little folding of the hands to rest,**

**v11: and your poverty will come in like a highwayman criminal, and your need will be like for an armed soldier in battle or you will need weapons to protect yourself as violence will be the order of the day.**

- ii. Americans have been and still are basically asleep as they allow this type of legislation to be proposed and instituted in many cases.
15. Not only does Bible Doctrine condone your right to self protection but it is a BIBLICAL DOCTRINAL principle.
  - i. Historically when nations disarm internally or by external pressures as per the 3<sup>rd</sup> Punic war between Rome and Carthage.



- ii. This is what occurs when citizenry and nations disarm self and when there are no public or private armories in the nation.
- 16. We have been warned by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ himself that there will be wars and rumors of wars until the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent.
- D. This is Our personal savior who in discussing the Angelic Conflict in a passage and explaining to the apostate people why he did not cast out demons in the name of Beelzebub had this to say:

**Luke 11:20-21**

**v20: But (in contrast to the fallacy of my casting out demons in the name of Satan) IF I, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Hypostatic Union, by the little finger or tiniest power of God the Father, instantly cast or throw out with great violence and power demons and I do, consequently then the kingdom of God on Earth HAS arrived or come to you in Israel first (the arrival of the King of Kings in the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ).**

**v21: Whenever, as it often has happened in history, that strong person; strong with character, intelligence, integrity, common sense thinking, alertness, perspicacity, understanding principle, being always prepared for any emergency or contingency, and ability to orient to all situations, having human reconnaissance ability and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul; after having been completely well armed possessing an arsenal of weapons and knowing how to use the weapons, he guards and defends his own home and all his property, therefore his personal and material possessions and his family and loved ones ARE and REMAIN undisturbed or in tranquility, welfare, prosperity and health;**

- 1. He is still talking about the angelic conflict and pointed out the accusation of him casting out demons in the name of Satan is not true.
- 2. The little finger is an anthropomorphism which represents the tiniest power of God and God being omnipotent could never be considered weak and God has more power in his little finger than Satan has in his entire empire and all his hosts of fallen angels.
- 3. V20 is the use of sanctified sarcasm.
- 4. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ did this as part of his earthly ministry presenting himself as the Messiah, God/man in **Hypostatic Union**, the son of David king of Israel and **ONLY** savior.
- 5. The kingdom of God on earth is to be with the King of Kings ruling but In the Angelic Conflict in time it is composed of believers in the Royal Family of God.
- 6. The kingdom of God is made up of those who are in the Royal Family of God only and they arrived by means of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- E. V21 sets up a principle which must be illustrated and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ will now use a point of doctrine from the Laws of Divine Establishment for the illustration in v21 and revolves around the concept of PREPARATION.
  - 1. He is saying Be prepared for my coming and with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul you are prepared and without it you cannot be prepared in any way.
  - 2. The illustration is crime which was prevalent in the ancient world and people lived in homes which were taken by surprise attack not by stealth.
  - 3. The criminals had to achieve surprise and had to catch the law abiding citizen Disarmed and without any means of defense.
  - 4. Therefore the illustration provides an additional point of doctrine to illustrate that anti gun legislation of any kind in any generation is **EVIL, IMMORAL, DANGEROUS, DEGENERATE, TREACHEROUS, TRAITOROUS, A VIOLATION OF HUMAN FREEDOM AND THE PRINCIPLE THAT THE INDIVIDUAL HAS A RIGHT TO PROTECT LIFE OF SELF AND OTHERS, HIS PROPERTY AND MATERIALISTIC THINGS.**
  - 5. This was stated by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ himself and as will all things in the bible it is the word of God, the mind of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the voice of God the Holy Spirit even when from those other than Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

F. V21:

1. Some people in every generation are strong because they have character, intelligence and common sense with Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and they are always prepared for any exigency
  2. In this verse Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ condones the possession of arms by private citizens for defense of life, property and possessions and freedom.
  3. This statement by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the original Greek indicates his support of the citizen having an ARSENAL of all sorts of weapons throughout his home and knowing how to use them to protect himself and his STUFF and his freedoms.
  4. This includes everyone in the house knowing how to use them and this is the WORD OF GOD.
  5. Thus the well armed person with common sense and ability to use the arms are authorized by Bible Doctrine and results in the protection and preservation of the freedom, privacy, property, possessions and LIFE of those in the home and family.
- G. This does not set aside the principle that GOD protects the Royal Family of God but adds another aspect where by we see that as part of the Royal Family of God WE must protect our society and city by fighting the criminal.
1. It is not that God cannot protect you but you have responsibilities also.
  2. It is not a violation of the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(4 categories)</sup> to have insurance of any kind but fulfills the principle of providing for one's own family or loved ones in a special way when you are not able to do so in the case of disability or death.
  3. The government long ago also began to interfere with this principle of insurance and it was to bring the people closer to total dependence on the government.
  4. The government should depend on the people not vice versa
  5. When the government depends on the people YOU HAVE FREEDOM, but when the people depend on the government you have TYRANNY.
- H. Being properly armed the strong man of character and common sense protects his people, property, wealth, personal possessions, not only his but also those of his neighbor and by being armed he does service to the community as well as to himself maintaining a principle of freedom against the criminal from within and enemy without.
- I. Principles:
1. In this illustration of preparedness Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ illustrates the principle of being WELL and COMPLETELY armed to protect life and property from criminal types.
  2. This is a principle of Bible Doctrine and the Laws of Divine Establishment demand that the individual have such weapons needed to protect his family and loved ones, property and possessions from criminal aggression.
    - i. This is a principle of freedom.
  3. This does not preclude the function of **Law Enforcement** in the function of their duty but actually assists them in fighting crime.
    - i. Obviously the criminal is not going to attack where the police officer is.
    - ii. However in our large cities it is very difficult to have police where they will be needed most they being spread very thin.
    - iii. Therefore you must go back to the resource of common sense and personal weapons for protection against crime.
  4. The crime rate always drops when a well armed citizenry have and use weapons against criminals who invade their privacy.
  5. The degeneracy of the legislation in all areas of our government today is obvious and they would deprive all of us of freedom by removal of weapons and at the same time the press is all for gun registration and legislation and even confiscation but they do not realize that their freedom of press and speech is only on solid ground if we have the right to keep and bear our own arms.
    - i. They in fact in the press are fighting for removal of the freedom of the press.

- ii. The principle that gun legislation effects will be the same principle used to destroy the press.
- iii. The next attack of liberals (Now in partial effect with “political correctness” is freedom of speech and press.
- iv. This and other freedoms will jeopardize their millennial program and perfect environment concepts and little by little they will destroy each and every freedom we have.
- 6. The antagonism of legislative bodies toward the law abiding citizen having and using firearms in defense of life, home and property is Anti Christian and Anti constitutional.
  - i. These people are involved in a conspiracy against Americanism and the constitution and against FREEDOM.
- 7. The liberal majority in congress are in the process and have been for a very long time of destroying the nation and all its freedoms.
- 8. Tyranny is born in the name of panaceas and the greater good.
  - i. Today they attack gun ownership
  - ii. Tomorrow they attack business and free enterprise
  - iii. They undermine **Law Enforcement** and destroy our military leaving us at the mercy of the communist and islamic monsters the worst forms of evil on over 1000 years of human history.
    - a. Chinese and Russian communism, and islam is a total saturation of vicious EVIL.
  - iv. The liberal is represented by small minded females with no respect for authority and no objectivity and it is the women who have no manners and represent the idiocy of the DAY from long ago into our current time.
- J. Solutions to these problems and these idiotic liberal people:
  - 1. Daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception to take in Bible Doctrine and grow in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - 2. As has been pointed out here and from many other sources this is between each one of us and our governmental representatives and writing to them must occur to counter that which is coming from liberals.
  - 3. This must be an issue of extreme importance and it is NOT a matter of possession of firearms but one of continued possession of FREEDOM in every facet of life and continued evangelism and spiritual growth.

**Lesson #66      Series # 467      1Tim 4:13**

- I. Principles:
  - A. Sin originates with Satan and from the Old Sin Nature of man.
  - B. Evil is a system of thinking, the policy and plan of Satan for ruling this world.
    - 1. It is liberalism of today which is a total representation of the satanic policy as we have it in this country.
    - 2. The only solution to it is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - C. It is amazing when a principle, which is totally antagonistic to the concepts being put forth for so many decades with regard to destruction of freedom by gun control legislation, comes from the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ himself, how it generates SO VERY MUCH antagonism.
    - 1. This is not surprising since Satan is ruler of this world and he cannot stand Bible Doctrine nor the dynamics of doctrine and presentation of the living word, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as the only solution.
- II. The Pastor Teacher is the leader of the counter attack against apostasy which is related to Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - A. ALL Pastor Teachers MUST command certain things to his congregation:
    - 1. Attendance to hear Bible Doctrine taught

2. Good manners, poise and concentration
3. Obedience to Bible Doctrine
4. Demand privacy for the congregation and enforce it
5. This is part of the mechanics of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

B. The Pastor Teacher must teach Bible Doctrine and communicate it by way of monologue to the congregation.

1. The congregation is committed to a principle where by they must sit and be quiet and they have no right to complain or demonstrate any irritation or stir up any trouble and sit quietly and leave when it is over and NEVER return.
2. It is far better for the believer who is under Positive Volition to GO TO NO CHURCH than to go to a church were they will hear some idiot who knows nothing of doctrine and does not teach it and puts that believer under a strain just being there.

C. The basic principle is Authority is Authority whether we agree with it or NOT and the Pastor Teacher has authority to communicate in monologue dogmatically and he is the only one who has this authority and his opinions and policies derived from Bible Doctrine are the only ones which count.

1. If a person disagrees they must simply MOVE ON quietly to another Local Church.

D. Age has nothing to do with authority and whether a Pastor Teacher is young or older he still has the authority and must be respected by the congregation.

1. He must make himself a pattern for the congregation with regard to all aspects of Bible Doctrine and the Spiritual Life.
2. This does not mean the Pastor Teacher cannot not have a private life.
3. The true motivator of the Pastor Teacher is from focus on and occupation with Bible Doctrine and Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
4. In order to exercise his authority properly the Pastor Teacher must have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

III. The responsibility of the Pastor Teacher to the congregation:

A. Paul intended to return to Ephesus but never was able to do so having been arrested and then eventually executed.

1. Timothy is therefore NOW on his own and will be so for the rest of his life.
2. In the 2<sup>nd</sup> Epistle Paul asked him to come quickly being in roman prison again but there is no evidence that Timothy ever made it.

B. The Pastor Teacher is to focus his mind on and devote himself to paying close attention to Bible Doctrine constantly.

C. Principles:

1. Exegesis is the interpretation of the bible on the basis of grammatical, syntactical and etymological analysis of each context.
  - i. It can ONLY be accomplished when a student knows the original languages.
  - ii. A weak translation + a good analysis == a weak erroneous message.
  - iii. Exegesis always requires analysis of scripture in the original languages.
2. The result of exegesis is expository of the word of God.
  - i. If a pastor is using expository teaching of Bible Doctrine but do not know the languages or have access to someone who does they are in serious trouble.
  - ii. No matter how brilliant the analysis when done in a native language not the original languages can be no better than the translation used for the analysis.
3. Every Pastor Teacher must be a master of the original languages or dependent on someone who is.
4. The bible cannot be interpreted IN TRANSLATION and if the translation is wrong the interpretation will be wrong.
5. No interpretation can be any better than the translation from which it is taken.
6. To know what is being taught in the bible a Pastor Teacher must be a master of biblical Hebrew and Koine Greek and a student of the ancient world.

- i. This is not able to be acquired in just a few moments but needs a great deal of academic background to achieve.
  - ii. It also takes many years of personal study and concentration.
- 7. The foundation for preaching and teaching Bible Doctrine is correct and accurate exegesis of the original languages of scripture.
- 8. To become a master of these languages takes many years of diligent study and is a LIFE of concentration not occasional concentration.
- 9. The Pastor Teacher must have time which is provided by the congregation giving as unto the Lord and his remuneration which results.
  - i. This is in keeping with the commands of the word of God that the time of the Pastor Teacher must be free so that he can concentrate on the teaching of Bible Doctrine.

D. Principles:

- 1. All the things the Pastor Teacher must do are tied into the basic fundamental concept of the Pastor Teacher Modus Operandi which is study and teach over and over.
- 2. Exposition or public analysis of scripture, comfort encouragement and Bible Doctrine make it possible for the Royal Family of God to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and thus glorify God in their royal priesthood.
- 3. Note what is omitted from this verse:
  - i. No reference to church programs
    - a. The program is a system to take a weak pastor and give him some strength.
  - ii. No reference to raising money.
    - a. The Pastor Teacher must never become involved in begging for money.
  - iii. No reference to friendliness or operation lonely hearts.
  - iv. No reference to psychology or counseling
  - v. No reference to establishing a social structure in the Local Church and for the Pastor Teacher to try to function as a master of ceremonies and try to get everyone to meet each other and glad hand those who are totally obnoxious and withdrawn and reticent who function on a demand basis.
  - vi. No reference to choirs nor big music programs
  - vii. No reference to plurality of elders nor rotating the function at the pulpit between arrogant, egotistical, power lust lame brain individuals to preach.
  - viii. What is omitted is almost as important as what is contained in this passage.

IV. Doctrine of the Grace Apparatus for Perception – The Principle of Learning

- A. There is great emphasis in this and many other passages that the Pastor Teacher MUST be a communicator of the word of God
  - 1. Communication of Bible Doctrine is the whole thing for the Pastor Teacher and must be a student all his life.
  - 2. He must live in the ancient world as well as in our time and understand the languages and thoughts and recapture life as it then existed.
  - 3. There is one great interpretation principle of hermaneutics which says the bible must be interpreted in the time in which it was written and if that is not possible then no application can be made to the time in which we LIVE.
  - 4. A Pastor Teacher must be a student of the languages, the bible and the ancient world.

B. Definition:

- 1. GAP is an acrostic which represents the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - i. These are found even in our liberal government and generally can be considered a SNAFU, Situation Normal All Fowled Up, or TARFU, Things are Really Fowled Up (you can add your own vocabulary for proper understanding).
- 2. This is a grace system for perspicacity in the field of Bible Doctrine.
  - i. The bible was designed to be understood and is a revelation from God to man.

- ii. It is not to be obscure or abstruse nor designed to be mysterious and almost incomprehensible.
- iii. It is designed to be understood and every portion is designed with that purpose in mind.
- iv. You cannot understand some parts until you understand simpler portions and the bible is totally locked together.
- v. There is not part nor passage which cannot be understood by someone.
- vi. This is the spiritual IQ of the Royal Family of God.

3. There are 3 systems of perception:

- i. Rationalism == Meritorious == Reason as the source of knowledge superior to and independent of the sensory system and is the nor or criteria for reality.
  - a. It is the adherence to the supremacy of reason in matters of belief and content.
  - b. The subjection of Bible Doctrine and scriptural interpretation to human reason rejects the principle of dogmatic authority just a GRACE rejects Legalism and vice versa.
- ii. Empiricism == Meritorious == Learning by observation and experimentation and requires the function of the human senses relaying their observations to the brain.
  - a. Experience, Observation, Experimentation provide the basis for reality and perception.
- iii. Faith == Nonmeritorious == Learning by accepting the criterion or authority or both.
  - a. This is the reality of the UNSEEN.
  - b. It is a system of thinking by which we learn from 70-95% of everything we ever learn.
  - c. It is building knowledge on the basis of an absolute authority or axiom whether it is God Exists or  $1+1 == 2$ .
  - d. The validity of faith depends on the criteria or object of faith.
  - e. In Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the object is Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the only savior.
  - f. In the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception the object is the content of scripture as Bible Doctrine, promises, principles all the absolute criteria of the word of God.

C. There is a distinction between human and spiritual IQ.

1. IQ == Intelligence Quotient

- i. Human IQ == Numerical designation assigned to a person on the basis of dividing his mental age by his chronological age.
  - a. Mental age is determined by testings
  - b. Chronological Age is determined by interrogation.
  - c. The results are multiplied by 100 and the cut off age for any effective IQ test is 14 at most.
  - d. We are interested in Human IQ since it is not a factor in learning Bible Doctrine.
- ii. Resident Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is called (heb) Chakmah or (gr) Epignosis
  - a. These 2 words indicate the principle of nonmeritorious perception.
  - b. Spiritual IQ is the amount of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. **Col 1:9-10**
  - c. You cannot walk worthy of the Lord nor please God unless your soul is filled with a maximum of Bible Doctrine.
  - d. It is the content of Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, WHAT you think which matters not what you do.

- iii. All spiritual growth, blessing and everything important in the life is related to Spiritual IQ knowledge of Bible Doctrine.
      - a. It is the thought that can make or break you.
      - b. The dynamics of the Spiritual Life of the Royal Family of God are permanently linked with THOUGHT
- D. The exclusion of Human IQ from the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - 1. Human IQ has often been considered a factor in learning Bible Doctrine and this is a satanic myth.
    - i. This would imply that low IQ believers would be handicapped in learning Bible Doctrine.
    - ii. In Eternity Past God set up a system through grace where by every believer can learn Bible Doctrine totally apart from human ability, perspicacity and Human IQ.
  - 2. For this reason at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God every believer receives the regenerated Human Spirit in order that he can assimilate all the doctrine of the word of God, given time, patience, the right Pastor Teacher ETC. **1Cor 1:19-2:16**
- E. The grace provision for learning Bible Doctrine:
  - 1. Formation and preservation of the canon of scripture.
    - i. The Canon was written over a period of 1500 years and has been preserved from the initial writing of Moses down to the completion of the New Testament Scripture canon for us down to our time.
    - ii. This proves that “greater is he in us than he in the world”.
    - iii. Satan’s main objective since the ascension and session of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is to discredit and distort Bible Doctrine and get the bible away from the Royal Family of God.
  - 2. Divine authorization for the Local Church.
    - i. This is the only way for any of us to grow in the Spiritual Life
    - ii. Inside the academic halls of the Local Church the bible is the text and the Local Church is the classroom.
    - iii. Only in this classroom can the Royal Family of God grow in the Spiritual Life.
    - iv. In this classroom the Royal Family of God assemble as students without portfolio and the only right of the congregation in this assembly is concentration and focus of attention of the word of God.
    - v. The Local Church must assemble under the principle of strict academic discipline with good manners, poise and strict discipline motivated by the Filling of God the Holy Spirit resulting in great concentration on the word.
    - vi. The Pastor Teacher has the absolute authority to teach Bible Doctrine compatible with is spiritual gift and his function under studying and teaching diligently.
    - vii. The Pastor Teacher is therefore the ruler of the Local Church and his deacons are his administrators.
    - viii. As Bible Doctrine is transferred from the written page to the soul of the member of the Royal Family of God this member establishes a command post in the inner soul and inner dictator and becomes eventually spiritually self sustaining.
    - ix. The Local Church continues to be a classroom as long as the Church Age continues and only the rapture will eliminate the Local Church as classroom for the Royal Family of God.
  - 3. Provision of the right Pastor Teacher
    - i. Everyone has their own personal right Pastor Teacher.
    - ii. The spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher involves both authority and ability to communicate Bible Doctrine in the Local Church by means of monologue.
    - iii. There are many ways for the preparation of the Pastor Teacher to occur and this will be reviewed.
  - 4. Provision of the royal priesthood of EVERY Believer.

- i. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we are Royal Family of God
  - ii. As part of the Royal Family of God we are also in a priesthood with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as our royal high priest.
  - iii. As a royal priest it is imperative we be briefed concerning what this life is all about in the Church Age as quickly as possible.
  - iv. In order to recognize the privacy of the priesthood and establish a principle of objectivity in grace perspicacity every believer priest has privacy when assembled with others in the Local Church.
  - v. This privacy must be guaranteed by the leadership and authority of the Pastor Teacher.
  - vi. Then each believer can concentrate as a novice learning Bible Doctrine and advancing to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God without distraction or corruption.
  - vii. The Creation of a public relation image, getting involved in social action, working around the Local Church, improving one's personality, observing religious and legalistic taboos is not the objective.
  - viii. Human gimmicks and public relations and legalism are not substitute for the spiritual dynamics of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - ix. Every royal priest through the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception must construct his own Altar and Inner dictator in the soul.
5. Ministry of God the Holy Spirit
- i. Regeneration, Baptism of God the Holy Spirit, Indwelling Sealing and provision of a spiritual gift.
  - ii. After this God the Holy Spirit has other ministries related to learning Bible Doctrine
  - iii. These were studied under the concept of a balance of residence in the soul of the believer.
6. Human Spirit provided in regeneration by God the Holy Spirit.
- i. This is the means of transferring Bible Doctrine from the Left Lobe to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - ii. Bible Doctrine in the Left Lobe is academic understanding
  - iii. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the use of the dynamics of the word of God.
  - iv. The believer must transfer Bible Doctrine from the Left Lobe to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in order to be able to apply it to life.
  - v. God the Holy Spirit bears witness with the human spirit that we are children of God Rom 8:16-17
7. The Laws of Divine Establishment are setup in order to stabilize mankind
- i. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment national government is responsible to protect the freedom and privacy of the Local Church.
  - ii. This is religious liberty and under this there must be a separation of church and state.
  - iii. Freedom through military victory which guarantees the perpetuation of witnessing, evangelizing and the function of the individual believer under the Grace Apparatus for Perception in the Local Church.
  - iv. There also must be proper function of LAW and the Judge and Law Enforcement on patrol.
  - v. In addition there is HUMAN AUTHORITY and the Pastor Teacher has the authority in the Local Church
    - a. Any person who rejects any other level of authority will also reject the authority of their right Pastor Teacher to their own spiritual detriment.



8. Grace in Human Anatomy.
  - i. This involves the sustaining of the human being alive and the things needed for the brain to function to learn and metabolize Bible Doctrine and then apply it.
- F. The first target of Grace Apparatus for Perception is receptive comprehension.
  1. The first thing which happens in the Local Church is that we LISTEN to what is taught.
    - i. It is received by the Human Spirit and copied into the Left Lobe of the soul.
  2. The Left Lobe is the NOUS and the information may be understood and this information resides there but is of no use to the believer.
    - i. These are the people who can recite details about Bible Doctrine but cannot use or apply it to their own life.
    - ii. These people are totally disoriented to reality and have only intellectual comprehension which is what the unbeliever can do as well.
    - iii. This is why the Human Spirit is regenerated for us as a processing area and Bible Doctrine must go into the Human Spirit and then from the Left Lobe must move into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the Frame of Reference under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit and from Positive Volition toward that Bible Doctrine.
    - iv. Then it will in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul be properly distributed throughout the soul. **James 1:5**
    - v. We must not only be Hearers of the word but also Doers of the word.
    - vi. Hearers are those who gets the Bible Doctrine in the Left Lobe
    - vii. The Doer is the one who has gotten Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul under faith perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit ministry.
    - viii. The Doer is not someone working for something but one who has Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul on the launch pad for application. **James 1:19-25**
    - ix. No rudeness in the congregation, no rights to anger just to be objective.
    - x. Being an angry person does not achieve Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace.
    - xi. When you hear Bible Doctrine and do not accept it and it stays in the Left Lobe then YOU ARE DELUDED.
  3. The believer with Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine who transfers Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will when he reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace be a recipient of Sharing the Happiness of God.
    - i. Therefore Bible Doctrine in the Left Lobe is simply a category of understanding while Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is a category of application, utilization of Bible Doctrine and resulting Divine Viewpoint of life.
- G. Mechanics of the Grace Apparatus for Perception:
  1. Stage I == preparation and communication under the principles of ICE where by the Pastor Teacher prepares and communicates Bible Doctrine to the congregation.
    - i. Study by the Pastor Teacher to form a message for presentation to the congregation.
    - ii. Under ICE there is the Pastor Teachers part mechanically which begins long before he stands at the pulpit with intensive study over a LONG period of time.
    - iii. This preparation finally climaxes in a message to be presented.
    - iv. The concepts included are
      - a. Isogogics which deals with the principle of interpreting the bible in the historical time in which it was written.
        - i) Many times a passage can only be understood under this principle.

- b. Categorical communication of Bible Doctrine bringing in and classification of other pertinent Bible Doctrine which relate to the subject being taught.
    - c. Exegetical Analysis of the language in which the scripture was written.
  - v. This all together is a presentation.
  - vi. Stage II is the part of the congregation where there must be good manners, poise, self discipline, thoughtfulness and concentration all provided by Positive Volition and Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
  - vii. This is illustrated by the respirator system and a person holding their breath and then automatically breathing when they try not to.
    - a. This is equivalent to the Filling of God the Holy Spirit which makes the Grace Apparatus for Perception function.
    - b. Oxygen in the Air is like Bible Doctrine in the bible.
    - c. Oxygen in the blood is like Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - viii. Grace function of inhaling involuntarily illustrates the grace function of learning Bible Doctrine.
    - a. Air goes into the lungs and is transferred to the blood and CO2 is returned to the lungs from the blood.
    - b. Inspiration can cause up to 6 or 7,000 cc of air to be inhaled, expiration removes all of this but leaves about 500 cc of Residual air.
    - c. Residual air is like residual Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as epignosis in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - d. Residual Bible Doctrine in the soul is the only usable Bible Doctrine in the believer to be used in situations of life.
  - ix. It is used for construction of the Edification Complex of the Soul and to fill up the various compartments of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

(I am thinking this is what is correct. BOB please check this as it is not what the col was saying at this time in this lesson and I may be in error here as to the operation of the Grace Apparatus for Perception but he was not following the concept of Operation Z here.)

- 2. Stage II is where Bible Doctrine is taught by the Pastor Teacher and under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit is moved into the Human Spirit.
- 3. Stage III is operation GNOSIS where Bible Doctrine heard is situated as understanding in the Left Lobe.
- 4. Stage IV is Operation Epignosis where Bible Doctrine is moved from the Left Lobe when it is metabolized or accepted under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit and Positive Volition into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for storage and ultimately application to life.
- 5. Once Metabolized Bible Doctrine is in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul it is then distributed to all parts of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and stored and accumulated there.
- 6. Sunesis == Bible Doctrine in the vocabulary
- 7. Suneidesis == Bible Doctrine in the Norms and Standards or conscience
- 8. Sophia == Bible Doctrine in the launch pad for application to life
- 9. Stage V is operation glory where a maximum amount of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul glorifies God.
- H. The primary result of the function of the believer under the Grace Apparatus for Perception is spiritual growth to Spiritual Maturity Super-Grace
  - 1. Therefore maturity is expressed in synonyms:

- i. Epignosis / Chakmah == maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Frame of Reference and Human Spirit
  - ii. Theological synonym == Greater or Super-Grace **James 4:6**
  - iii. Priestly Synonym == Alter in the Soul **Heb 13:10**
    - a. You must be a mature believer before you can properly use Metabolized Bible Doctrine.
    - b. The uses of Bible Doctrine are found in Heb 13 and Rom 12
  - iv. Edification Complex of the Soul ==
  - v. Redeeming the time or purchasing time comes from maximum capital of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul **Eph 5;16-18, Col 4:5**
  - vi. Central Control == the dictator in the soul which is the inner residence of Metabolized Bible Doctrine from consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception **Eph 6:10**
    - a. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul becomes the inner dictator of the soul which causes the believer to become spiritually self sustaining, independent of Human Viewpoint and bad advice and independent of Evil, reversionism, legalism and religion and you begin to think for yourself and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul becomes the basis for your discernment in life.
  - vii. Military synonyms:
    - a. Putting on the full armor from God Eph 6:11-18
    - b. Following the colors Heb 12:1-2
    - c. Establishing a command post in the soul Col 2:5-8
  - viii. Crucifixion Synonym == having nothing to do with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross but the roman custom of crucifixion.
    - a. Long before Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ went to the cross the Romans crucified over 1,000,000 people and it was a well known and established system of capital punishment among Romans.
    - b. To take up your cross and follow **Jesus** is attendance in bible class and the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception in spite of opposition and distraction.
    - c. To follow Christ is the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Matt 10:38, Mk 8:34, Luke 9:23, 14:27
  - ix. Chemical Synonym == The salt of the land is the believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - a. Salt is a means of preservation for food and meat.
    - b. Salt means that the believers with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul are the basis for preservation of the nation and this is OUR only hope in the United States.
  - x. Sanctification synonym == Godliness having been studied.
- I. Reversion recovery as a result of function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
    - 1. This is removal of Scar Tissue of the Soul
    - 2. Freedom from the influence of evil
    - 3. Cancellation of Divine Discipline
    - 4. Once into reversionism it may take YEARS to recover and it is a function of being under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - J. Glorification of God in the Angelic Conflict through attaining Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace
    - 1. This results in receiving Super-Grace blessings in 4 of the 5 categories in time.

2. Then receiving at the end of life Dying Grace
3. And then in eternity receiving Surpassing Grace blessings and rewards.
4. These are the result of the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

K. Equating the royal status of the believer with the royal functions of the believer.

(Again this is a little confusing for me so please check what I have entered here since this is not exactly what the Col has said in the lesson but what I again interpret from what I remember)

1. The normal function of the royal ambassador begins at the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with the establishment of the altar in the soul.
  2. Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace then begins at the point of having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul a result of consistent faithful function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
- L. The Grace Apparatus for Perception leads to Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ or maximum category I Love
1. This also leads to capacities for all aspects of life and living.
  2. Inner residence of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine results in gaining capacities for all aspects of life, love and happiness and blessings.
- M. The Grace Apparatus for Perception provides maximum influence in history.
1. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace has as part of this Super-Grace blessing package maximum historical impact.
  2. The Super-Grace believer are also the source of blessing for everything with which they are associated.
    - i. The family, business, organizations, cities, counties, regions or nations.
- N. The Grace Apparatus for Perception provides the basis for bonifide production in the Spiritual Life ie the function of the royal ambassador.
1. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace are qualified for production of Divine Good in contrast to Human Good.
  2. These believers are insulated from evil and pseudo Christian activity and has discernment to see through the phonies and thus avoids this type of service.
- O. The Grace Apparatus for Perception results in maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is the basis for eternal rewards ie Surpassing Grace Blessings.
1. This glorifies God forever.
  2. Our decorations in eternity GLORIFY God and because of this we are benefited.
  3. Desiring these decorations is a GREAT function and represents a GRACE ORIENTATION.
  4. This glorifies God forever and brings blessing to the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super-Grace or Ultra Super-Grace far beyond the PEON believers who will be in heaven.
    - i. The holy rollers, legalists, Christian cultists, conscientious objectors, cowards, bleeding heart liberal believers are all going to be Peons in heaven.
    - ii. They will have a Resurrection Body and NO Old Sin Nature
    - iii. They will be MINUS the Old Sin Nature, Minus Human Good Minus Evil, Minus the Lake of Fire and Minus Decorations and MINUS SPECIAL blessings for eternity.
    - iv. They will have a GREAT happiness but beyond this is a greater happiness which comes from glorification of God in time from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which results in receiving BLESSING from God for time.

**1Tim 4:13**

**v13: Until I, Paul, come back again to Ephesus, turn one's mind on to a subject, devote oneself, pay close attention to and be concentrating on going over scripture again and again by exegesis and analysis breaking down each passage word by word**

**in order to come to an exact interpretation, the comfort encouragement from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, the teaching of Bible Doctrine.**

**Lesson #67**

**Series # 467**

**1Tim 4:14**

- I. Principle: Formal Recognition of the Pastor Teacher
  - A. The information in this passage is not only for Timothy the flop pastor of all time a wimpy weak sister being without honor, integrity and having NO grace policy.
    - 1. He was so weak being pushed around by so many people that Paul told him to drink once in a while to calm his nerves.
  - B. The formal recognition of the pastor is not just for the Pastor Teacher only but also for the congregation.
    - 1. Always in the process somewhere there is someone in training for a congregation.
    - 2. It is essential for RIGHT Pastor Teacher and RIGHT congregation exists together as this is where the believer grows in the Spiritual Life.
    - 3. You cannot grow in the Spiritual Life apart from the Local Church and your right Pastor Teacher.
    - 4. The abuses of apostasy in any Local Church or group of them is any excuse for setting up a weak sisterhood called denominations where all the Pastor Teachers lean on each other and have mutual fellowship and have to count numbers to feel strong.
    - 5. Denominations are weakness not strength and they are apostate and this is inevitable
    - 6. The Word of God is designed in our dispensation to ensure that the Local Church policies are taken from Bible Doctrine through the teaching ministry of the Pastor Teacher.
    - 7. If the Pastor Teacher fulfills his job of study and teach consistently then the policy will be established as a GRACE policy based on Bible Doctrine.
    - 8. When a pastor gets lazy and into a denomination and even if he does study the bible he will find conflict between the policies of Bible Doctrine and those of the hierarchy of his denomination.
    - 9. He will have to teach the denomination policies and try to get the bible policies in when he can and this is NOT healthy for the congregation.
    - 10. There never was any denomination made up of autonomous Local Churches.
    - 11. These churches are weak when they have to get together with other Local Churches.
  - C. It is imperative that there be ONE right Pastor Teacher for one right Congregation and he must be strong from the standpoint of Integrity, Spiritual Life, Study and Teach consistently.
    - 1. When this occurs then Positive Volition can gather in the Local Church and the result always is spiritual growth which is the ONLY way to save this nation.
    - 2. The only thing keeping the United States alive today is:
      - i. Treatment of the Jews
      - ii. The Spiritual Life of Mature Believers
      - iii. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls Human History.
    - 3. There are numerous solutions in the area of the Laws of Divine Establishment for our nation:
      - i. War
      - ii. Taking POWER away from the federal government and putting it back into the constitution.
      - iii. The power really belongs to the voters who have very little choice today in voting for a HORRIBLE liberal and ONE WORSE than he.
      - iv. We have incredible federal encroachment in our government on our freedoms and our constitution.
      - v. It is doubtful that most people in government have any idea what the constitution or the bill of rights has to say about rights
      - vi. They have no idea that the PEOPLE have a RIGHT to recall a government and start over.

vii. These things were past the point of no return in 1975 and we are far beyond that point today.

D. There must be formal recognition of every Pastor Teacher and he must be Launched by some Local Church somewhere.

1. Organizations which are crusading organizations are apostate and there is conflict of interest between 2 policies:

i. Bible Doctrine policies

ii. Denominational or service organization Policies

2. Inevitably the policies change and this occurs in every generation.

i. The policies of the denomination or service organizations change and do not follow biblical policies since they are not a Local Church and do not have Local Church discipline and do not have a Pastor Teacher whose authority is recognized as absolute and whose ministry is respected by Positive Volition and daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

E. Right Pastors & Local Churches

1. Timothy failed in his function by neglecting his spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher.

2. Timothy is the right Pastor Teacher for the congregation of Ephesus but he is neglecting his responsibilities for the congregation.

3. He is not consistently teaching the congregation in Ephesus which is entrusted to his care.

4. (gr) charisma == spiritual gifts not Talents of the Human Race as used today.

II. Doctrine of Spiritual Gifts:

A. Definition:

1. This is derived from (gr) Charisma meaning something freely graciously bestowed on believers by God.

2. They are part of the distribution of spoils as a result of the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ who sits now at the right hand of God the Father.

3. This victory is accomplished by:

i. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ bearing in substitution all human sins on the cross.

ii. Providing salvation.

iii. Dying physically and being resurrected 3 days later

iv. Ascending and being seated at the right hand of God the Father.

4. This broke the back of Satan and this is the accomplished strategic victory of the Angelic Conflict.

i. As a result of this there are spoils of victory and these include the spiritual gifts.

ii. We are Royal Family of God and never before have there ever been such a distribution of spiritual gifts and never did they exist like this before.

5. We must understand the Royal Family of God and that everything about us as believers in the Church Age is UNIQUE and all this uniqueness is a grace provision by God and NOT SOMETHING WE EARN, DESERVE, WORK FOR OR HAVE BECAUSE OF A PLEASANT SWEET PERSONALITY, but is based ENTIRELY on the gracious giving of God.

6. We have the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit as a sign of royalty

7. We are placed into union with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ by the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and this is the Making of Production of royalty in us.

8. We are regenerated by God the Holy Spirit as all believers in the past being given a regenerated Human Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

i. No Old Testament Scripture believer was ever under Baptism of God the Holy Spirit nor was he ever under the Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit.

9. There never was a spiritual Royal Family of God until the ascension and session of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

i. There were many royalties on earth and royal dynasties but no spiritual royalties.

ii. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is sovereign God and thus a king

- iii. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is in the line of David king of Israel and is therefore a human king
  - iv. However these are not the royalty involved in our spiritual royalty.
  - v. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ entered into the Holy of Holies the throne room of God and was seated at the Right Hand of God the Father the place of highest honor at which point he was a new spiritual royalty with only 1 person, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
10. 10 days after the session of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ God the Father interrupted the Age of Israel and established the Church Age to form a Royal Family of God for Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ for the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent.
- i. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ will return to the earth with a Royal Family of God
  - ii. This Royal Family of God is being formed in the Church Age.
  - iii. When the formation of the Royal Family of God is completed the rapture will occur and the resurrection of all Church Age believers who will receive a Resurrection Body.
  - iv. In their Resurrection Body there will be completion of the tribulation on earth during which time and Church Age believers called the bride will be being prepared to return with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent.
11. This is all related to the concept of spiritual gifts.
- i. A part of the victory of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ Spiritual gifts were provided as part of it.
  - ii. There is special blessings for believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in time and eternity as part of the spoils of this victory.
  - iii. Like all the spoils of this victory the EXPLOITATION demands Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - iv. Every believer has a spiritual gift and Super-Grace blessings and Surpassing Grace Blessings for eternity given in Eternity Past by God the Father but in order to exploit them and have them there must be Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
12. There are many categories of spiritual gifts some are revealed clearly and some not but enough are delineated for us to clearly understand the subject.
- i. In the Church Age spiritual gifts are God the Fathers organized witness to GRACE and SALVATION as well as the division of spoils of the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  - ii. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we each receive a spiritual gift from God the Holy Spirit.
  - iii. It is not necessary for us to know at any time our spiritual gift because it will function automatically at any time that the believer reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace with a balance of residence in the soul.
  - iv. This is what triggers the function of the spiritual gift in each believer EXCEPT the Pastor Teacher.
- B. Distribution of the spiritual gifts.
- 1. The initial distribution of these gifts began at the beginning of the Church Age when the Royal Family of God was beginning to be formed.
  - 2. They were provided by the victorious Christ Eph 4:8-11
  - 3. Subsequent distribution of the spiritual gifts in the Church Age is by means of God the Holy Spirit who has organized the distribution in such a way so that in every generation and local every spiritual gift for the function of the church is present.
  - 4. These may or may not be exploited but they are all present.
  - 5. This is a divine function of the omniscience of God the Holy Spirit **1Cor 12:11**

6. These gifts do not depend on human ability, talent, achievement but are a sovereign gift from God the Holy Spirit.
- C. Function of the spiritual gifts:
1. At any point in the Church Age each spiritual gift in any geographical area is needed for function of the church in that area **1Cor 12:27-31**
  2. All spiritual gifts function through the ministry of God the Holy Spirit related to doctrinal content of the soul **1Cor 13**
  3. Functional spiritual gifts depend on maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul **Rom 12:3**
  4. The true perspective regarding spiritual gifts is in **1Cor 12** Why Royal Family of God with spiritual gifts should never feel inferior nor superior.
- D. 2 Categories of spiritual gifts:
1. Party Gifts
    - i. These were part of a celebration which took place in the pre-canon period of the Church Age
    - ii. The existence of the Royal Family of God on earth called for a great party and Pentecost was actually the greatest party in history.
    - iii. This being a spiritual party there were many spiritual activities related to gifts.
    - iv. The gift of tongues to warn Israel of the coming 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline.
    - v. The gift of interpretation so that the people speaking would not be thought insane.
    - vi. Miracles and Healing just to get the attention of those who were stubborn.
    - vii. As a result of these gifts there was a great party and many were saved and all had a good time.
    - viii. Some even today have forgotten that this PARTY is OVER and has been for 2000 years.
    - ix. People who think tongues, healings, miracles still exist are hanging around after the party is OVER.
    - x. This party was used to celebrate the beginning of the Royal Family of God and it was a great party **Eph 4, Acts 2**
    - xi. Once the canon was completed the party gifts were removed by God so we could focus on doctrine.
    - xii. Tongues and interpretation were removed in AD70, Apostleship was removed in AD96, Miracles and healing before these even while Paul was still alive, Acts 19:11-12 compared with Phil 2:27.
    - xiii. We now must settle to the life the Lord has provided and this life is better for the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    - xiv. There were certain gifts given for the party which no longer exist.
  2. Permanent Gifts
    - i. These exist in every generation of the Church Age till the rapture of the church **Rom 12, 1Cor 12**
    - ii. Every believer in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God receives a spiritual gift.
- E. Time of distribution:
1. All spiritual gifts were distributed for the first time after the ascension of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ **Eph 4:8**
    - i. On the day of Pentecost when the age of Israel was interrupted and the Church Age began.
- F. Abuse of spiritual gifts:
1. This is recognition of the fact that many have tried through emotion, psychological problem, pseudo activity to perpetuate these temporary gifts.
  2. Beyond AD96 anyone who claims to have one of the temporary spiritual gifts they are reversionistic and wallowing in apostasy.



- G. Communication gifts are very important and there are 2 surviving communication gifts:
1. Outside the Local Church is Evangelism.
    - i. This is designed to be OUTSIDE the Local Church and lead people to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
    - ii. This gift has no authority in the Local Church and is not to communicate in the Local Church since his focus of communication is the gospel.
    - iii. Once a congregation has been evangelized it is time for them to move on in the Spiritual Life to greater doctrinal things.
  2. Inside the Local Church is Pastor Teacher. Heb 13:7&17
    - i. The purpose for this gift Eph 4:11-13
  3. Apostle and prophet are both no longer existing as spiritual gifts in the Church Age.

III. Stop neglecting the Gift:

- A. Timothy's gift is that of Pastor Teacher and he has neglected its proper function.
- B. The steps from for the believer who has a communication gift of Pastor Teacher.
  1. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God God the Holy Spirit in his sense of humor and through is sovereignty bestows the gift of Pastor Teacher on certain male believers apart from any merit on their part.
    - i. They are not Pastor Teachers because they are nice or because they failed in business or could not get a job anywhere.
    - ii. A person never earns nor deserves the gift of Pastor Teacher.
    - iii. Some people think that their personality and ability to soothe others is what leads to the ministry of Pastor Teacher.
    - iv. God the Holy Spirit STICKS this gift in all kinds of men with all kinds of personalities.
    - v. Never try to type the pastors in the ministry and will lead to disillusion and being under the influence of evil and spending life in reversionism and there is NO such thing as a preacher type.
    - vi. They are men stuck with this spiritual gift and they may or may not become a Pastor Teacher with their own Local Church.
    - vii. This gift is bestowed apart from the cognizance of the gift by the new believer and no one knows he is to be a Pastor Teacher at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  2. The man who has the gift of Pastor Teacher at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God must ASAP get into a congregation where Bible Doctrine is properly taught.
    - i. This may or may not be the church of his choice which may be the weirdest church in town.
    - ii. With the Super-Grace of Pastor Teacher the believer MUST grow up to the point where He can recognize he has this gift and the only way for that is to grow spiritually and this can only occur from daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
    - iii. Exposure to Bible Doctrine teaching in the Local Church results in enough Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to become aware of the spiritual gift.
    - iv. Between Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Awareness there must be spiritual growth producing the awareness NOT some emotional activity.
    - v. It is imperative that by consistent teaching of Bible Doctrine that all believers grow up in the Spiritual Life especially the one carrying the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher.
    - vi. Awareness will come with growth and it should be quiet and subdued.
    - vii. Once awareness is reached the difficulties begin, since no other job nor profession will ever have first place again neither will any person.

- viii. For the rest of the life of this believer it **MUST** be Bible Doctrine above all else and this means setting aside of many things or people to focus on Bible Doctrine.
  - ix. The great capacity for life which any Pastor Teacher should have is not going to hurt him in any way.
3. Aspiration for the ministry of Pastor Teacher **1Tim 3:1**
- i. You cannot go on for the preparation unless there is motivation from aspiration.
  - ii. There will be a lot of agony before you are ready to handle a congregation and before that you will be ground into dust and then rebuilt on the toughest discipline
  - iii. There must be strong academic discipline and every other strong discipline in life and why military training is so very good for the future Pastor Teacher.
  - iv. Very few men want to get to the ministry of the Pastor Teacher in the way they should from the intensive discipline and incredible self discipline needed to eventually function in the ministry.
  - v. No one can properly use authority until he has been under unfair authority and this is what is wrong with many Pastor Teachers today and have never had to take authority being under others.
  - vi. Most of these men just don't know what they are doing and are under blind arrogance.
  - vii. You don't learn discipline **OVERNIGHT** and the person who learns discipline must **BE** under discipline and you must know both ends of it to balance it out and use authority properly.
  - viii. **NO** Pastor Teacher ever uses discipline or authority properly unless he has been on the end of the strongest discipline possible.
  - ix. Aspiration provides the motivation to get into **TRAINING**.
4. Preparation for the ministry:
- i. Getting real academic discipline for Learning Languages and History
  - ii. Practical training including Military Training in many cases.
  - iii. In the early church the Pastor Teacher trained the men in his congregation but today things have changed and there are levels of higher education for training Pastor Teachers today.
  - iv. Athletic involvement under a coaches discipline, Academic Discipline in higher education in a tough curriculum, Military Discipline, ETC.
  - v. This man can go into a business situation and respect the authority of management even if they were not highly competent.
  - vi. Many people want an easy life and easy way but this is not authority or discipline orientation.
  - vii. Good manners are a sign of general concepts of authority and capacity in life **MUST** be related to authority.
  - viii. The Pastor Teacher in preparation **MUST** learn what authority is all about.
  - ix. There must be self discipline and basic concepts of authority from college or seminary or services.
  - x. There is often some seminary needed but not in every case but there must be intensive concentration on Bible Doctrine and spiritual growth from some Pastor Teacher who can communicate Bible Doctrine.
  - xi. The college or seminary may have rules which **MUST** be obeyed if the person wants to matriculate there and you don't have to like the rules but you do have to **OBEY** them.
  - xii. Today in most institutions the faculty and administration cater to the students and they should not.
  - xiii. No students in any institution **HAVE ANY RIGHTS AND THEY ARE THERE TO LEARN AND NOT TO TALK BACK OR COMPLAIN ABOUT HOW THINGS ARE RUN.**

- xiv. Trying to get around the rules demonstrates a person is a SNEAK and has no knowledge of discipline and will never function properly in administering discipline and authority.
  - xv. A great part of the training of the Pastor Teacher is discipline and once you start something you finish it unless you are kicked out of the program.
  - xvi. The most disciplined person in any organization especially the Local Church is the one who has the MOST authority.
5. Completed Preparation and Transition:
- i. The Lord may not open a Local Church immediately and then the Pastor Teacher must cool his heels for a while waiting for his Local Church.
  - ii. The Lord may provide a temporary insignificant job or a transitional congregation small full of mean legalistic people who demand all his time.
  - iii. God keeps some congregations going simply as training grounds being made up of nasty bullies full of arrogance and many Pastor Teachers learn a great deal from these people.
  - iv. God deals with each Pastor Teacher candidate in a different way and there is no standardized process after preparation is completed.
6. The Pastor Teacher finally receives his right Local Church where the congregation is generally responsive to and under Positive Volition toward the teaching of their right Pastor Teacher.
- i. This is the stage where the Pastor Teacher begins the hardest and most rewarding study of his life and his study under ICE is now continuous.
  - ii. This is a danger stage because enthusiastic response to the early messages often leads the Pastor Teacher into thinking he knows it all and should right books and tape his ministry etc.
  - iii. Somewhere in stages 5 and 6 the Pastor Teacher is examined and tested by a Local Church and if he passes ORDAINED.

**Lesson #68      Series # 467      1Tim 4:14**

- I. Freedom through military victory:
- A. All national freedom and sovereignty and privacy is based on military victory.
  - B. In our nation we abuse the military every day of peacetime and then recognize them 1 or 2 times a year.
  - C. In our nation we see the incredible degeneracy of the people in a lack of desire to WORK shown in the shifting of the holidays in order to give long weekends.
    - 1. We don't even call Armistice day by the right name any longer because WE WON THAT WAR BY A DECISIVE DEFEAT OF OUR ENEMIES.
  - D. We have a few great national holidays which are great because they represent something significant in our national life.
    - 1. Religious holidays are a farce in that they cater to legalism.
    - 2. Military holidays are significant because they cater to patriotism under the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  - E. Memorial Day is one of these great holidays and should be a day to remember those who have died in service to our nation and protection of our freedom.
  - F. Roy W Harmon, Sgt. C Company 362<sup>nd</sup> infantry 91<sup>st</sup> infantry division (From Oklahoma)
  - G. Donald J Ruhl, PFC USMC (From Montanan) E Company, 28<sup>th</sup> Marines, 5<sup>th</sup> Marine Division, 19-21 Feb 1945 IWO JIMA.
  - H. These men and hundreds of thousands of others have made it possible for all of us to be evangelized and accept Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and advance in the Spiritual Life.
    - 1. God has ordained until the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ that all freedom of any nation will come from the military establishment and NEVER from any politician.
- II. The Ordination of the Pastor Teacher:

- A. The spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher is never earned nor worked for and there is no standard type of man for the Pastor Teacher ministry.
1. The result of the spiritual gift for the Pastor Teacher is spiritual growth, maturity and preparation to bring the man to the point of being able to function as a Pastor Teacher.
  2. God the Holy Spirit knows how many congregations there will be in the world and has made provision for Pastor Teachers for every HUNGRY congregation for Bible Doctrine.
  3. Paul is telling Timothy that he was WELL prepared to be a Pastor Teacher.
  4. Once he finished his preparation he was sent to Corinth and he failed at Corinth where Titus had to be sent in to take over and fix it.
  5. Timothy went then to Thessalonica and Philippi which were nice congregations and he taught very well there and everyone was happy.
  6. Paul was probably blinded by this not realizing that Timothy was a WEAK person and a mamma's boy and in combination with these he was all sweetness and light and wanted to love and be loved by everyone.
  7. He had not concept of the necessity for moral courage in spiritual leadership and in fact had none and was a coward and wimp.
  8. When he wound up at Ephesus he was properly trained and had the needed information knowing what needed to be communicated but did not have the courage to do it.
- B. There was a time in the preparation of Timothy where the Pastor Teacher was recognized by other believers and pastors in a ceremony called Ordination.
1. Ordination is a formal recognition by a Local Church and the Pastor Teachers of that and other Local Churches of the spiritual gift of the one being ordained.
  2. The ceremony involves the "Laying on of Hands" which is a climax of the entire ceremony where the pastors and deacons place their hands on the one being ordained and pray for him in recognition of his spiritual gift.
  3. This is like the principle of baptism where the one being ordained is IDENTIFIED with those of LIKE KIND.
  4. Pastors recognize the ordained one as follows in the ministry while deacons recognize him as one ready for the ministry with his God given gift.
  5. They are saying he is a man with a high rank and high authority which should be recognized by all believer wherever he goes.
  6. This man is responsible in his life directly to God which means DOUBLE discipline and DOUBLE blessing as well.
  7. His teaching of Bible Doctrine sets up policy for his Local Church and the deacons administer those policies and the congregation follows these policies.
  8. There are not women as Pastor Teachers EVER and there never are Deaconesses in the Local Church either.
- C. There is no authorization for denominations every and the Local Church and the Pastor Teacher are to be autonomous in every way.
1. Denominations are in fact EVIL and result when Pastor Teachers in Local Churches have to lean on one another because they are WEAK.
  2. Being in a denomination as a Pastor Teacher is a public sign that that Pastor Teacher is WEAK.
  3. This Pastor Teacher in a denomination may know Bible Doctrine and is responsible for all policy in the Local Church and BIBLE teaching is what is responsible for establishing Local Church policy and he may even teach correct Bible Doctrine to his congregation but the denominational hierarchy also has policy which also must be adhered to and therefore he must split the following of policy between that of the bible and that of the denomination.
  4. No matter how much Bible Doctrine this Pastor Teacher knows he will be frustrated because the denominational policy NEVER totally aligns with the policies of the word of God.

5. The denomination is in face an abomination there is NO Place in the Church Age for denominations and all denominations without regard to their church government are apostate by reason of being a policy organization outside of the structure of established policy of the word of God.
  6. The word of God recognizes independent Local Churches but NEVER denominations.
- D. The Pastor Teacher is supposed to make progress in the field of Bible Doctrine by studying and teaching consistently.
1. This is his job and where his policy comes from.
  2. By receiving remuneration from his Local Church his time is cultivated in studying and teaching passages of scripture to his congregation.
  3. As a result of this his congregation grows in Grace in the Spiritual Life.
  4. He cultivates the word of God and breaks new ground in exposition and must find and expose other passages which helps to illuminate the passage being taught.
  5. He then has to get to the EXACT meaning and purpose of the passage and how it relates to the context.
  6. The life of the Pastor Teacher is being occupied with the word of God and the principles of teaching from persistent studying of Bible Doctrine.
  7. This is specifically directed to Timothy who has NOT been doing these things and he is a weak sister cowardly yellow wimp and has appeared to be this throughout these passages.
  8. Progress of the Pastor Teacher in the Spiritual Life becomes conspicuous from the consistent studying and teaching of Bible Doctrine.
- E. Timothy is now warned that if he does not pay close attention to his function and what he does as a Pastor Teacher then GOD will pay attention.
1. Since in the table of organization in the Church Age every Pastor Teacher is responsible directly to God he must have extreme caution in watching his step in life since Divine Discipline for the Pastor Teacher is far greater and has more severity than any Divine Discipline for anyone in the congregation.
  2. Pastor Teachers get 2x the Divine Discipline as anyone else.
  3. It is in the interest of Timothy and all Pastor Teachers to exercise self discipline and therefore avoid the intensity of Divine Discipline.
- F. Believers in the congregation must be aware that the primary priority in their life MUST be the consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and DOING any work for any reason in the Spiritual Life is of no value to spiritual advance.
1. God can ONLY bless the believer who has capacity for the blessing and capacity for the blessing comes from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  2. The prosperity available to every believer is in every realm of life and when God can prosper the believer totally apart from the Cosmic Dynasphere on the basis of your growth in Grace then God is glorified and there is ANOTHER Tactical Victory in the Angelic Conflict.
  3. The Pastor Teacher must be a plodder and study and teach consistently and not become involved in any Gimmicks to attract or keep people in the congregation.
  4. The only thing important for the Pastor Teacher is the principle of study and teach consistently
  5. The believers in the congregation of the Pastor Teacher who is focused on the principles of study and teach will be delivered in every aspect of life.
  6. Even in time of disaster or depression the believer in Super-Grace Status Quo will always have more than what is needed for survival and prosper even in times of economic disasters.
  7. The Pastor Teacher causes these things by his studying and teaching constantly.

v14: STOP neglecting, disregarding the Spiritual Gift resident in you freely given by God the Holy Spirit, one wiser than you, which was given to you for the sake of or because of the prophesy or doctrines taught and previously learned in your seminary preparation, which have not yet been reduced to writing, associated with the laying on of hands by the council of other Pastor Teachers and Deacons in the local church in recognition of the new Pastor Teacher's spiritual gift, rank and authority.

1Tim 4:15

v15: BE Practicing or cultivating these things the principle of studying and teaching, keep on being in or occupied with these things or principles, in order that your spiritual advancement or progress might be; maybe it will and maybe NOT depending on whether you study diligently, constantly, consistently; conspicuous and apparent to your entire congregation.

1Tim 4:16

v16: Keep on paying close attention to yourself exercising very strong self discipline and to that Bible Doctrine or public teaching, persist in these same things, for by doing this you will deliver from disaster, prosperity, daily life, Evil the satanic policy for this world, both yourself and the ones constantly consistently hearing you under strong poise and academic discipline in the congregation.

**Lesson #69      Series # 467      1Tim 5:1**

- I. Doctrinal Application in human relationships for varied Age Groups and Relationship Groups. 1Tim 5
  - A. Doctrine of the Royal Family of God:
    1. Every believer in the Church Age is ROYALTY and in the Royal Family of God.
      - i. This is permanent and eternal royalty.
    2. Working Definition:
      - i. The Royal Family of God is the family of the king who is king on 3 counts:
        - a. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is THE King
        - b. As God and deity he is sovereign king
        - c. As Humanity by physical birth he is descended from David, a Jew, and born from the legitimate royal family of Israel and therefore a king based on the lineage of David.
        - d. As the God / Man in Hypostatic Union seated at the right hand of God the Father as a result of the Ascension and Session after Resurrection he is Spiritual royalty and has a battlefield royal title.
      - ii. There are many ancestors in the human royalty and we have studied the varied genealogies involved in the lines from David.
      - iii. In the realm of the Battlefield royalty, the spiritual royalty of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ there are only those believers of the Church Age which comes from his strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
      - iv. The Royal Family of God is the family of the KING.
      - v. The FAMILY of God includes all persons in Human History who have expressed faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone in every dispensation.
        - a. This started with Adam and Ishah in the Old Testament Scripture and goes all the way through to the Resurrection, Ascension and Session of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
        - b. Therefore for at least 4000 years of Human History we have believers in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as he was revealed to them resulting in their being family of God.
        - c. These were NOT Royal Family of God.
        - d. David was Royalty by profession but not Royal Family of God
        - e. Moses was a great ruler and genius human but he is NOT Royal Family of God.
        - f. Isaiah was in the Royal Family of Israel but when he believed in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was only family of God.
        - g. All through the Old Testament Scripture God the Holy Spirit regenerated people at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and they became family of God.

- vi. In the Church Age at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone God the Holy Spirit puts us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ through the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and we become Royal Family of God.
  - a. The Royal Family of God is made up of believer in the Church Age from Pentecost to the rapture of the Church Age
  - b. To whom much is given much is expected.
  - c. We have many things in the Church Age which has not ever been given before to any believers.
  - d. Our briefing Day by Day in bible class is the means by which we fulfill the expectations of Grace in formation of the Royal Family of God.
  - e. ONLY in the Church Age is the Royal Family of God formed.
- vii. All systems of historical royalty begin with very unusual people, those with great talent and ability far superior to their peers.
  - a. All royalty begins in Human History with the most fantastic people and declines over time.
  - b. As royalty we are in full time service to the Lord and are royal ambassadors representing Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ to the world and also a royal priest who is able to represent self to God.
  - c. Church is the Royal Family of God and the Local Church is the assembly of the Royal Family of God in a local geographic area.
- viii. The sooner we become royalty conscious the sooner we will be able to take responsibility for the things in the 5<sup>th</sup> chapter of Timothy.
  - a. The book of Timothy is a practical royalty briefing.
- 3. The setting for the Royal Family of God.
  - i. The 1<sup>st</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ occurred in the dispensation of Israel including the crucifixion, deaths, burial, resurrection, ascension and session of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ at the right hand of God the Father.
  - ii. 10 days after the session the age of Israel was interrupted before its conclusion and a new dispensation was started.
    - a. This was to insert a new dispensation whose sole purpose was to call out a Royal Family for Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  - iii. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was royalty by birth, by deity and became royalty by strategic victory and session at the right hand of God the Father.
  - iv. Out of the 3 sources of royalty the spiritual royalty occurred as a result of his Deaths, Resurrection, Ascension and Session and they occurred to provide a spiritual royalty.
  - v. Seated at the right hand of God the Father, King of All Kings, Lord of all Lords and because of this as a man the God / Man he is a new type of royalty, a superior permanent spiritual royalty.
    - a. King of Kings, Lord of Lords means that ever though Satan rules this world and often administers through various rulers Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is superior to all of these as the God / Man and a new permanent royalty.
  - vi. As King of Kings and Lord of Lords Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ must have a Royal Family of God to share his reign.
  - vii. Therefore the Age of Israel had to be paused in order to introduce a new dispensation whose purpose was to form a spiritual family to rule with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ forever.
- 4. Documentation for the Royal Family of God:
  - i. Books of Ephesians which emphasizes the position of the Royal Family of God forever while Hebrews emphasizes the priesthood of the Royal Family of God.

5. Formation of the Royal Family of God:
  - i. Baptism of God the Holy Spirit
  - ii. Positional Truth
  - iii. Sanctification
  - iv. From the inception of the formation of the Royal Family of God we must understand the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit:
    - a. There are 7 baptisms in the scripture some are obscure.
    - b. Not all are water baptisms
      - i ) Baptism of Moses finds the Jews going through the Red Sea DRY.
      - ii ) Baptism of the Cup has nothing to do with Water but the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross.
      - iii ) Baptism of Fire or identification with fire just before the millennium begins which removes all unbeliever from the world and Satan as ruler of the world.
      - iv ) The Most famous DRY baptism now if focus as the means of forming the Royal Family of God.
      - v ) It is obvious why Satan makes so much fun of and ridicules the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit through people who think they are speaking in tongues when they are simply blithering.
      - vi ) This is an attack on the formation of the Royal Family of God and they act not like royalty but act insane at best.
    - c. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is the unique activity of God the Holy Spirit NOT of Man in any way.
      - i ) It occurred the first time with those who were Adult Believers beginning the new dispensation of the Church Age.
      - ii ) It only occurred in one place in Jerusalem with the 11 disciples to Israel and about 200 other believers hanging around after the resurrection.
      - iii ) These believers in a moment of time were taken by God the Holy Spirit totally apart from any human merit and entered into union with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
      - iv ) This occurred roughly in AD30 on the Day of Pentecost and the Age of Israel ended temporarily here.
      - v ) There was immediately a big party and the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is what caused the Royal Family of God to be formed and there were many things which had to be done by way of celebration.
      - vi ) When the Church Age began there was NO New Testament Scripture and no way to straighten out these new members of the Royal Family of God.
      - vii ) They only had the Old Testament Scripture and there was nothing there about the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit because was a part of the mystery doctrine of the Church Age.
    - d. NO one knew anything about this new dispensation and the only ones who could have known any thing at all were those 11 and a few others in the upper room discourse and the Gethsemane discourse and Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ told them everything and they missed it all. **John 13-18**
      - i ) In order to get the party going right and make it a real party some temporary gifts were passed out
        - a) Healing



- b) Tongues to warn Israel they were all through **(Is)**
      - c) Interpretation
      - d) Miracles
    - ii ) This party started in the morning and the legalistic pharisees got out and said these men were all drunk and this was a HOLY DAY.
    - iii ) Peter had no precedent for the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and the temporary party gifts and he had to explain it to many believers and unbelievers and said it was like what Joel said would happen in the millennium and it was a spiritual function.
    - iv ) These were all to get the Church Age a great kickoff.
    - v ) ONLY in AD96 was the party actually over.
    - vi ) We have all the information for the Church Age in writing in the canon of scripture which is the standard for the Royal Family of God and it is our guide book and rule book and Modus Vivendi for the Royal Family of God.
    - vii ) AND THE PARTY IS OVER PERMANENTLY.
  - e. This is a foundation doctrine from God and his assent that we are now members of the Royal Family of God forever.
  - f. God the Holy Spirit took each useless one of us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and entered us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ making us Royal Family of God
    - i ) He regenerated each of us but also did that for all the Old Testament Scripture believes as well making them family of God.
    - ii ) This is not experiential but is an identification with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as the super royalty FOREVER.
    - iii ) This occurs with the other 38 irrevocable assets given us for our Spiritual Life in time and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit in a split second at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - g. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is not a Pentecostal phenomenon but that which happens to every member of the Royal Family of God and is the grace mechanics of how we become royalty and Royal Family of God forever.
  - h. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ talked about it and it was discussed in, **John 14:20, Acts 1:5, 1Cor 12:13, Col 2:12, Acts 2:3, 11:15-17**
  - i. We are all baptized into union with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and there are no racial, social nor gender distinctions in the Royal Family of God. **Gal 3:26-28**
  - v. Positional Truth means we are Royal Family of God
  - vi. This is also Salvation or Phase I Sanctification
    - a. There is At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the sanctification enters us into the Royal Family of God.
6. The Royal Family of God relationship becomes then an issue:
- i. The spiritual royalty of Christ, Jesus is unique.
    - a. As God he is sovereign
    - b. As Jew he is Royalty after the line of David.
    - c. AS the God / man in Hypostatic Union seated at the Right Hand of God the Father in Resurrection Body he is a new spiritual permanent royalty.
      - i ) He is King of Kings and Lord of Lords.
      - ii ) At his session Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ had no Royal Family and God the Father then made provision of the dispensation of the Church Age to establish the Royal Family of God for the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

- d. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit was the starting point of the Church Age and Royal Family of God.
- ii. The Royal Family of God is designated as:
  - a. Body for the Royal Family of God on earth and a PRE rapture term
  - b. Bride for the Royal Family of God in heaven with a Resurrection Body prepared to return to the earth with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and a Post rapture term.
  - c. During the tribulation the Bride will be getting a new outfit of clothing.

**Lesson #70      Series # 467      1Tim 5:1**

- I. Freedom through military victory:
  - A. Howard E Woodford, SSgt. I Company, 130<sup>th</sup> Infantry 33<sup>rd</sup> Infantry Division, Philippines
  - B. Cassin Young, Cmdr USNavy, (from Wisconsin) Commander USS Vestal, Pearl Harbor 7 Dec 1941.
  - C. Roger W. Young, Pvt 148<sup>th</sup> Infantry, 37<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, New Georgia Solomon Is. 31 July 1943
    - 1. Song Roger Young related to his courageous Act.
- II. Doctrine of the Royal Family of God continued:
  - A. Doctrine of Positional Truth the result of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit
    - 1. We are entered into union with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ by means of the ministry of God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
      - i. This is OUR position in Christ.
      - ii. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is the mechanics and this position is the result.
      - iii. This position belongs to ALL believers no matter their Status Quo in their Spiritual Life.
      - iv. EVERY Believer is in union with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and this positional truth makes it possible for us to be Royal Family of God.
      - v. This never existed prior to the Church Age and never will exist after the Church Age.
      - vi. This positional truth guarantees that there will be no judgment for any believer in eternity for those “in Christ, Jesus”.
      - vii. This guarantees our Eternal Life and the mechanics of the Righteousness of God being imputed to us and is the key to Election and predestination and explains why we are new creatures in Christ, Jesus and yet still sin constantly.
      - viii. We are NEW Creatures in Christ, Jesus and this is strictly a positional concept and an synonym for the Royal Family of God and there is NO experiential connotation.
    - 2. We are new creatures in Christ, Jesus because we are Royal Family of God because of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and we are instantly at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God such and not one bit better than we were before Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. 2Cor 5:17
      - i. Even if we were better that does not change anything and does not help in any way for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
      - ii. Giving up things in life means nothing for salvation and does not do a damned thing for us nor make us better.
      - iii. The means of getting to heaven in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death work of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and nothing we do can add to that.
      - iv. The new believer is a member of the Royal Family of God because of what God the Holy Spirit did at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God putting us in union with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

- v. The stupidity of GIVING UP something is meaningless and not part of the change of a person at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - vi. This is the legalistic meandering on the part of idiots who have no Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and totally under the influence of evil and expressing a religious hypocrisy.
  - vii. When people get involved in giving up things for or after salvation they simply are trying to assuage their guilt complex for their life before salvation.
  - viii. Most of the people who have “cleaned up their lives and are now pillars of society” having changed after salvation are a pain in the neck to be around.
  - ix. We must get rid of the concept of doing things for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Spirituality and helping GOD in these areas.
3. There are characteristics of Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and Positional Truth:
- i. Never is it an experience nor emotion nor ecstasies nor making great decisions nor giving up things which are fun.
  - ii. It is not progressive and you cannot improve on salvation what God does and the implication of giving up things for God for salvation for spirituality is saying what God has done is not good enough and then you must improve on it.
  - iii. It is not related in any way to human merit, ability, Human Good, getting involved in anything in social action.
  - iv. The implications of retroactive positional truth say there is no place in the Plan of God for Human Good nor operation bleeding heart nor getting involved in anything.
  - v. The believer is Royal Family of God from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and once he is in the Royal Family of God he will be in it forever eternally.
  - vi. There is no act on the part of the believer, no sin nor failure power on this earth nor in heaven which can change this.
  - vii. This is the amazing thing about our royalty.
4. The whole principle of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and Positional truth which causes us to become Royal Family of God is taught only by the word of God and is part of divine revelation and not something someone dreamed up.
- i. It is attained at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and what you do after salvation has nothing to do with your being royalty.
  - ii. It is completed and total at the moment of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and is one of the 39 irrevocable assets given us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and nothing can change it.
- B. Royal Family Relationship:
- 1. Reviewed
- C. The Escutcheon of the Royal Family of God:
- 1. In as much as the Royal Family of God lives in the holy of holies forever God the Holy Spirit sets up an Escutcheon for each of us by indwelling the body of every believer. **1Cor 6:19-20**
  - 2. We have a royal coat of arms to live up to while we are still on earth the permanent indwelling of God the Holy Spirit.
  - 3. Whether we sin, fail, become apostate or influenced by evil we cannot ever lose the Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit.
    - i. We can lose the Filling of God the Holy Spirit but this concerns the soul and when we lose the Filling of God the Holy Spirit we still will have the Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit.
  - 4. God the Holy Spirit can fill the soul and control it or Evil can do so but the Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit never ceases and no believer can be demon possessed.
    - i. Never before in history has this ever occurred.

- ii. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit are different and our coat of arms our escutcheon is the Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit.
  - iii. The bible commands the Filling of God the Holy Spirit but NEVER does it COMMAND the Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit.
  - iv. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit has to do with the soul and his control of our soul and being out of fellowship from sin he does not control the soul but he is always in the body of the believer.
  - v. This coat of arms cannot be removed because as a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in the Church Age we are now and always will be Royal Family of God and we cannot lose this which is the work of God.
5. The most arrogant people in the world are those who think they can lose their salvation.
- i. They have the colossal nerve to think they can commit a sin which will cancel out the Plan of God.
  - ii. This is arrogance but even then they cannot lose their Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - iii. We enter salvation by a GRACE means from the work of God and we cannot change that nor add to it.
  - iv. The Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit is a guarantee that we have Eternal Life and eternal salvation and NO ONE can ever take this from us.
- D. Security of the Royal Family of God:
- 1. The 39 assets give us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God provide perfect security for every believer.
  - 2. God is perfect and his plan is perfect and this is the basis for our temporal and eternal security.
  - 3. The perfection of this plan is seen in the fact that there is nothing man can do to either GAIN or LOSE salvation.
  - 4. This work of God is greater than anything we can do, any sin or act of evil or function of life or meritorious bit of Human Good or legalism nothing can remove our salvation.
  - 5. When reversionism and apostasy and evil combine they cannot combine salvation and positional sanctification and sealing of God the Holy Spirit are testimonies to these principles
- E. The Royal Family of God in Time Phase II of the believers life.
- 1. The objective of the Royal Family of God in time is to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace and establish the command post of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul completing the Edification Complex of the Soul and growing in grace until we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - 2. The believer must move to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
    - i. This is the tactical victory of the Angelic Conflict and it is achieved by maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - 3. God is glorified when he can provide for any believer his Super-Grace blessings.
    - i. In Eternity Past God provided these blessings with your name on them and it can become yours if you choose to engage in a daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and accumulate a maximum amount of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - ii. When you reach the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God then Super-Grace blessings are provided for you totally apart from any system or involvement in the world of Satan.
    - iii. He pours into our cup of Ps 23 5 categories of blessings with one reserved for our death.

- iv. EVERY believer if he is persistent in function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception daily WILL have these things provided for him.
- v. As Royal Family of God we are also ambassadors for Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on earth and we are here to represent Christ on earth.

F. The Royal Family of God in eternity:

- 1. After the rapture all members of the Royal Family of God will possess a Resurrection Body exactly like that of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
- 2. This Resurrection Body will be minus the Old Sin Nature and minus Human Good and Minus Evil and minus the Lake of Fire and any condemnation.
- 3. The Royal Family of God will return with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ to earth at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent to share in his coronation and his eternal rule.
- 4. Those in the Royal Family of God who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception will have additional great grace rewards for eternity.
- 5. There will be a WIDE variation between believers in eternity and some will be highly decorated and some will have only their Resurrection Body and they never understood the grace plan of God and the mechanism by which they were saved.
- 6. Every decorations we have in eternity will be the means of glorifying Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ for eternity and our LACK of decorations are not honoring to the Lord at all.

III. Relationships in the Royal Family of God

A. Outline:

- 1. Royal Family of God relationships v1-7
- 2. Royal Family Responsibilities v8-16
- 3. Royal Family Authority v17-25

B. v1-2 show us that relationships are among varying age groups

- 1. We notice people often seek people of their own age for social life.
- 2. It is only in the Royal Family of God where fellowship can exist between people of wide age variation and among those of vastly differing personalities.
- 3. This does not exist in any way anywhere else.
- 4. People generally avoid others of varying age and background and seek their own level and compatibility and those who have similar interests in life.
- 5. This is not the same for the Royal Family of God and people in the Royal Family of God are made up of all ages.
- 6. We must understand LOVING the BRETHREN and know that it is NOT being nice or sweet or saying nice things etc but it involves Impersonal Love for Mankind and allowing the other believer to think, say or do what he believes to be good.
- 7. Loving the brethren is God the Holy Spirit giving us a Relaxed Mental Attitude in order that we can function under Impersonal Love for Mankind toward others without wanting to punch them in the face.
- 8. Thus loving the brethren is total freedom from Mental Attitude Sins and thus having a Relaxed Mental Attitude.

C. Principles:

- 1. It is inevitable that every local congregation is composed of varying age groups and both genders.
- 2. Variation in personality, activities in life and in age could lead to variations of personality conflicts
  - i. These conflicts could distract from the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception which is the major objective of the Local Church.
- 3. Consequently certain procedures are set up by scripture to anticipate these problems.

4. Generally concepts are found in other passages dealing with academic discipline, recognition of the authority of the Pastor Teacher, and other functions of the Royal Family of God and Royal Priesthood when gathered together.
5. In this context reference is made to age variations (Sometimes it is in personality variations 1Cor 12)
  - i. Being older is a great thing and Life is wasted on youth and getting older is a blessing and the only thing which could make youth better is to be saturated with Bible Doctrine when you are young instead of waiting until you are old to gain some sense about it.
  - ii. We must remember our objective in LIFE after consistency in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and that is to ENJOY our life based on blessing from God.
6. Male and female members of the Royal Family of God are handled separately in this context of age and there are differences between young men and women and Old men and women and v1 handles the men and v2 the women.
7. In anticipation of v1 dealing with male variations notice the parallelisms set up and in v2 there are guidelines set up which are familiar and similar
  - i. For the Men they are Father or Brother
  - ii. For the Women they are Mother or Sister

#### IV. v1 the problem of Males

- A. Sons do not reprimand their fathers and younger men should not reprimand their older men.
  1. Often Older men come into a congregation very set in their ways and they often go out that way even feet first still being set in their ways.
    - i. By the time people become older they are pretty much set in their ways knowing what they like and what they dislike and formed in their conscience the Norms and Standards by which they will live for the rest of their lives unless Bible Doctrine corrects a few.
    - ii. The standards do not vary in older people and they lose a great deal of flexibility.
  2. Older men always have some set ideas about some things and these will not change.
    - i. One thing we can count on in older men who think the youth of today is not a great as when they were young and the youth have no manners today etc, is that they also have some degree of memory loss as well.
    - ii. Older people in a congregation are much more unteachable and the older a person gets the more unteachable they can become.
    - iii. Sometimes it is because they think they know it all, and sometimes they do but most times he does not and will not learn anything NEW.
    - iv. This is often why older people stop thinking and engage in the 2<sup>nd</sup> childhood of aged people and their minds just dissolve and they are totally unteachable.
    - v. There is nothing new they want to learn and they stop thinking and their vocabulary shrinks and they therefore become imbecilic.
  3. Younger men seem to have a tendency to abuse their authority while older men just want a quiet life.
    - i. Older men often become bullies and likes to establish a fact that because he is older he knows more.
    - ii. Occasionally you will find a brilliant older man who never stops studying or learning whose mind is open to teaching and learning and this is a real treasure.
    - iii. Older men tend to be inflexible and unwilling to accept the authority of younger men.
    - iv. Older men no longer have youthful attractiveness and youthful vigor to hide their character flaws and it is difficult for older men to accept the teaching of a younger man especially if he is a wimp.

- v. It is difficult for older men to accept suggestions or carry on conversations with younger people in a congregation.
  - vi. The young people generally are impatient and tend to reprimand older men but here we are told NOT to do so.
  - vii. If you get into a disagreement with an older man treat him like a father.
4. When an older man threatens the function of the Local Church then the Pastor Teacher should simply have him removed.
- i. Between members of the congregation there should be deference for age when there is a small problem arising.
  - ii. When the young person is free from blind arrogance he can easily appeal to the older person being a grace oriented person.
  - iii. There is no reason for young and old people to get along in the Local Church if they simply would have some respect for each other.
- B. Principle of Respect for Age in a person:
1. Young men as Pastor Teachers must have great wisdom in dealing with older men who are under their authority.
  2. One of the characteristics of leadership and proper use of authority is thoughtfulness to those under your command and authority.
  3. Humility and Grace Orientation provide the younger people with objectivity toward the older members of the congregation.
  4. It is shocking for older people to be sassied by younger people and younger people should never speak up and be sassy to older people and even if they may be wrong and it is a matter of thoughtfulness and courtesy beyond loving the brethren.
  5. At some time you will have a conflict with a younger man for some innocuous reason but you must as a younger man simply let the matter go and defer to him.
  6. This is where GRACE comes in and where you get smart in life.
  7. When you get to your older age everyone in their sunset years has a right to their tranquility and youth by nature is NOT peaceful nor tranquil and therefore it is a grace function to demonstrate peace and tranquility toward those in their sunset years.
- C. Principles:
1. Possession of authority must never be abused and Pastor Teacher must never abuse his authority.
  2. Thoughtfulness and courtesy toward older men keep them concentrating on bible teaching in the sunset years of their lives.
  3. Young people full of ambition and arrogance often distort their own perceived importance into a system of bullying and abusing older people in the congregation.
  4. Unless the older man is just a total ass he is entitled to a certain amount of respect and veneration because of his advancing years.
- D. You treat men who are your contemporaries as if you were in their home and the parents are present.
1. Everyone has a right to privacy and to be in the Local Church without anyone making fun or ridiculing them in any way or bullying them.
  2. There are great differences in personality but everyone has a right to be in the Local Church and no one should ridicule their dress or peculiarities or different ways from yours.
  3. We do not have a right to ever make an issue of anyone for any reason personality or otherwise.
  4. We should in effect avoid sticking our noses into anyone else's business.
- E. This demonstrates the importance of a young Pastor Teacher establishing his authority by correct bible teaching rather than becoming rank focused.
1. This also provides GRACE emphasis since God has provided the authority for the Pastor Teacher.

2. No Pastor Teacher ever earns nor deserves the authority given him by God in grace therefore must use that authority in a grace manner.
3. Since the authority of the Pastor Teacher is the only pure authority in the world of Satan it should be guarded by GRACE functions rather than taking ego trips and getting all wound up in one's own self importance.
4. In the case of contemporaries of age in the congregation if you have avoided blind arrogance and acquired some Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul then you will respect the privacy and individuality of every member of the Royal Family of God at all times respecting them without any interference with their life and not causing them any harm or worry or concern.

#### 1Tim 5:1

v1: **Do not rebuke, reprove, reprimand an older man in the congregation when there is a conflict with him, but always show respect for and appeal or defer to him as you would your father; treat younger men, your contemporaries, like brothers,**

#### Lesson #71      Series # 467      1Tim 5:2

- I. Freedom through Military Victory
  - A. Freedom and Privacy and Property are all the courtesy of the Military
  - B. The greatest attack on freedom is from the politician and the greatest protection of freedom is from the military.
  - C. Mst. Sgt. Travis E Watkins, H Company, 9<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment, (From Texas), 31, Aug 3 Sept 1950, Yong Sun Korea
  - D. Harold E Wilson, Tech Sgt, USMC, G Company, 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion, 1<sup>st</sup> Marines, 1<sup>st</sup> Marine Division (From Alabama), Korea, 23-24 April 1951
- II. When the relationship between the Pastor Teacher and men in a congregation are observed in any nation they always result in a maximum of courtesy among the people and give a maximum number of people privacy to enjoy the freedoms provided.
- III. Ladies Night:
  - A. Women also get OLDER as time goes on but no one should actually recognize this process if they want to live.
  - B. The way older women should be treated again is based on standards set up as with Men.
    1. Loving the brethren does not mean you are emotionally attacked to all of these believers but that you are simply FREE from Mental Attitude Sins toward them.
      - i. This is Impersonal Love.
    2. The parallel standard for older women is to relate them to mothers.
    3. Mothers should always be treated with respect by their children whether good bad is totally inconsequential.
    4. No matter what kind of mother you have she is deserving of respect from all her offspring.
    5. Obedience is another essential function of children with regard to their mothers.
    6. By about 9 years of age all young men should already have inculcated respect for his mother and demonstrate it by obedience.
    7. If young men do not learn this principle they will not have good relationships with their contemporaries nor with their Right Woman.
    8. The reason men do not know how to treat nor handle women or how to get the most response out of them is because in the first place they had no respect for their own mothers.
    9. Respect for one's mother is based simply on the fact that she is YOUR mother.
    10. Many young men have not learned this respect because the father did not assist the mother in that area.



- C. The point of this passage is that if this does not exist in YOUR case or in the case of those believers under a Pastor Teacher then Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will take up the slack for this failing.
1. As a young boy is toward his mother so he learns proper respect and appreciation for woman hood
  2. Without this a woman is like a pet around the house and is something to be used and cast aside without realizing that she is a human being.
  3. In every generation there are many thousands of young men who are not blessed by having a STRONG father who handled the situation well or having a Noble Magnificent mother who incited by her life respect.
  4. The only way the slack for lacking in this area can be taken up is through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- D. Principles:
1. Women are always at their best when YOUNG.
    - i. There are exception to this but generally this is true.
    - ii. Generally in youth with their beauty and personalities at the highest their character flaws do not show.
    - iii. Once a woman gets to be older and less attractive the real person emerges and whatever flaws are there will be obvious to all.
  2. A young man does not have much to gain by being courteous and thoughtful to an older woman.
    - i. When a young man is this demonstrates the principle that he appreciates womanhood.
    - ii. This when produced by Bible Doctrine gives a person a fantastic adjustment to life.
    - iii. When a man appreciates womanhood in general he is extremely well adjusted to LIFE.
    - iv. This gives great capacity for life and appreciate elderly ladies where they often go unappreciated by youth.
    - v. He can appreciate many things about the older woman and learn a great deal from them.
    - vi. This does not apply to recalcitrant females who are actually the problem of the Pastor Teacher to get them OUT of the congregation.
  3. Wherever possible recognize the dignity of the Royal Family of God in every age category.
    - i. Many people by limiting themselves to people they personally find attractive or people whom they can use to help them in some way miss a great many things in life.
    - ii. People can contribute to your blessings and capacities of life who are in a bracket which is generally unappealing or unattractive to you.
    - iii. When young people recognize that people in older age brackets have great contributions to life and that they are as members of the Royal Family of God are also part of the principle of fellowship, they are very RARE people.
    - iv. Capacity for life is more than just enjoying materialistic things but includes capacity to enjoy God especially Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and also your peers but also to enjoy those older or younger or appreciate the direction in which they go and understand their vigor and vitality of YOUTH.
    - v. Many times you will encounter elderly people here speaking of ladies who have a great deal to contribute to your life and you must not just walk by and avoid them but recognize and be courteous to them.
- E. Younger Ladies:
1. Treat them with respect even if you are not compatible with them in any way.

2. This is not an excuse to make life miserable for them and by restraining self you can avoid all the conflicts which may occur in any congregation.
  3. Recognize the younger ladies as the weaker sex and they have something to contribute to you and with respect and deference you also have something to contribute to them.
  4. In this way a man becomes a gentleman and some of the MOST manly men who have ever lived are gentlemen.
  5. It is not being a sissy to be a gentleman being thoughtful and kind and courteous to ladies, any woman.
  6. Being a gentleman is not being weak but is the result of character and strength and discipline in the male.
  7. This passage is not talking about LOVE but says to treat the older and younger women the same way.
  8. Aristocracy always has good manners even toward those they cannot stand being around.
- F. You treat ladies in the congregation from the perspective of the EYES OF GOD never through the filter of your own judgment (which may be very poor).
1. God regards each lady in the Royal Family of God as being of extreme value and if that is so you must show them the proper deference.
  2. It is the Divine Viewpoint which counts in everything and no matter how insignificant or obnoxious a woman may be on any given occasion SHE is important to GOD.
    - i. This principle of Bible Doctrine must be kept in mind for true Royal Family of God sensitivity.
    - ii. This is our being sensitive to the Divine Viewpoint and operating on that basis and ONLY blind arrogance ignores the fact that all members of the Royal Family of God are equally important to God.
  3. We must keep in mind that when you assemble with others in the Royal Family of God for any reason remember that they are highest quality in the sight of God and this must be our perspective for our attitude toward them.
    - i. God never has nor will ever encourage us to form separate judgments from HIS standards.
  4. Love of the brethren is simply having a Relaxed Mental Attitude toward them and functioning under Impersonal Love for Mankind.
- G. Purity of Mind:
1. This is integrity and honor in the soul of a man which gives him enough poise to be a gentleman under every circumstance of life where ladies are concerned.
  2. Ladies can be and often are obnoxious.
  3. It takes a lot of poise, honor and integrity to maintain a calm relaxed attitude toward ladies when they get that way.
  4. We see this generally today in ladies who exercise their vocabulary with profanity and this is EXTREMELY prevalent today in our entertainment media which is totally defeminizing women.
  5. It is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which functions under honor and integrity toward all ladies.
- H. Principles for the Pastor with reference to his congregation:
1. This is a generalization to the whole congregation but also is a command to Timothy as well.
    - i. This is an emphasis of the importance of mutual respect between the Pastor Teacher and his congregation as well as among the congregation itself.
  2. Mutual respect between the Pastor Teacher and his congregation is not based on social life, sexual life, legalistic bullying, austere fanatical leadership but is based on the consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

3. Mutual respect is centered in the most important function of the royal priesthood, the daily assembly of the Local Church for the function of transferring Bible Doctrine from the canon to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer.
4. The Pastor Teacher respect the believers under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and consistently show up for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and demonstrate that academic discipline which indicates inner Positive Volition.
5. The congregation respects the Pastor Teacher who through diligent study presents Bible Doctrine which nourishes the soul and is needed to produce consistent growth in the Spiritual Life and needed to glorify God in time.
6. Therefore mutual respect is centered in the communication and reception of Bible Doctrine.
7. No church program or personality in the Pastor Teacher nor gimmicks nor display of silly emotion will ever replace the primary system of worship for the Royal Family of God which is the consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - i. Removing expository teaching of Bible Doctrine from the Local Church then the Local Church has no excuse for existence and becomes a hollow shell of religionism.
8. Insert expository bible teaching in the Local Church then it becomes the basis for both personal and nation blessing without interfering in national government.
9. Therefore as goes the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception so goes the historical trend in any generation.
10. Mutual respect portrayed in these 2 verses applies to:
  - i. The Pastor Teacher and his communication of Bible Doctrine.
  - ii. The congregation and their response to his teaching of Bible Doctrine.

#### IV. Doctrine of OLD Age:

##### A. Definition:

1. Old is a term of time and connotes having existed a LONG time and having advanced far in years and lost the vigor of YOUTH.
2. At 50 a piece of furniture becomes an antique but age with humans is a much more touchy subject.
3. Some are old at 20 and some young at 60.
4. Old age does exist whether we recognize it or not and the bible has a great deal to say about old age and we must examine it.
5. We must accept the details of 1Tim 5:9 as to the definition of OLD AGE it being 3 score years or 60 years of age as the line of demarcation as a general principle.
  - i. Some at this age are old and worn out while some are still dynamic and vigorous.
  - ii. Between 30 and 60 ladies are at their best and the 20's are wasted on those in that age group.

##### B. Old people are to be respected. **Lev 19:32, Prov 23:22,**

1. In the ancient world when old people entered the room the people were to GET ON THEIR FEET AND OFF THEIR BUTTS in respect and honor for the older person.
2. Children often turn away from their parents when they get older and unattractive.
  - i. Any child who is ashamed of their parents because they are old and unattractive there is something wrong with that child. **1Tim 5:1-2**
3. There is one category who will never respect older people and they are INVADING armies and this is why the military must be kept around and functional to keep them out.
  - i. Invading armies always destroy older people who are starved, tortured and killed outright **Deut 28:50, 2Chron 36:17**
  - ii. A healthy nation always respects is elderly.

##### C. The problems or bad things about Old Age:

1. It is a time of being unteachable from being set in their ways **Eccl 4:15** (there are exceptions).
  - i. It is better to be a poor wise young man than an older unteachable king.
2. Old people are also helpless **John 21:18**
3. Old people are more vulnerable to Disease **1Kings 15:23**
4. Old people become security conscious **Ps 71:9**
5. Divine Discipline makes people OLD before their time **Ps 6:7, 32:3**
  - i. It can be of such a nature that it can turn people old over night without regard to their chronological age.
6. Bible Doctrine learned in youth is profitable in Old Age. **Prov 22:6, Ps 71:17-18**
  - i. A child when trained in Bible Doctrine may not be straight as a child and may fall apart as a young man but if the doctrine is retained when he is OLD he will not depart from it.

**Ps 71**

**v1: In thee, O LORD, do I take refuge; let me never be put to shame!**

**v2: In thy righteousness deliver me and rescue me; incline thy ear to me, and save me!**

**v3: Be thou to me a rock of refuge, a strong fortress, to save me, for thou art my rock and my fortress.**

**v4: Rescue me, O my God, from the hand of the wicked, from the grasp of the unjust and cruel man.**

**v5: For you are my hope, Oh Lord God, my trust or confidence, from my youth.**

**v6: Upon thee I have leaned from my birth; thou art he who took me from my mother's womb. My praise is continually of thee.**

**v7: I have been as a portent to many; but thou art my strong refuge.**

**v8: My mouth is filled with thy praise, and with thy glory all the day.**

**v9: Do not cast me off in the time of old age; forsake me not when my strength is spent.**

**v10: For my enemies speak concerning me, those who watch for my life consult together,**

**v11: and say, "God has forsaken him; pursue and seize him, for there is none to deliver him."**

**v12: O God, be not far from me; O my God, make haste to help me!**

**v13: May my accusers be put to shame and consumed; with scorn and disgrace may they be covered who seek my hurt.**

**v14: But I will hope continually, and will praise thee yet more and more.**

**v15: My mouth will tell of thy righteous acts, of thy deeds of salvation all the day, for their number is past my knowledge.**

**v16: With the mighty deeds of the Lord GOD I will come, I will praise thy righteousness, thine alone.**

**v17: Oh God, you have taught me from my youth, and I still declare your wondrous deeds.**

**v18: And even now that I am old and gray, O God, do not forsake me, until I declare your arm, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, to this generations. Your power of Bible Doctrine to all who are to come.**

**v19: and thy righteousness, O God, reach the high heavens. Thou who hast done great things, O God, who is like thee?**

**v20: Thou who hast made me see many sore troubles wilt revive me again; from the depths of the earth thou wilt bring me up again.**

**v21: Thou wilt increase my honor, and comfort me again.**

**v22: I will also praise thee with the harp for thy faithfulness, O my God; I will sing praises to thee with the lyre, O Holy One of Israel.**

**v23: My lips will shout for joy, when I sing praises to thee; my soul also, which thou hast rescued.**

**v24: And my tongue will talk of thy righteous help all the day long, for they have been put to shame and disgraced who sought to do me hurt.**

- ii. It is often the dynamic of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the older person which does the MOST for the next generation.
  - iii. The best way to get a better country for the coming generation is to be consistent in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
  - iv. Every generation must stand on its own and the only thing which can be passed on to the next generation which is helpful is Bible Doctrine communicated.
  - v. Old people with Bible Doctrine communicating it to the next generation is the means of this occurring.
7. The blessings of Old Age.
    - i. These are to the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace in 5 categories:

- a. Temporal Blessings
- b. Spiritual Blessings
- c. Association Blessings
- d. Historical Impact Blessings
- e. Dying Grace Blessings.
- ii. In addition to these categories of blessing to the mature believer he also has a wonderful old age with many blessings.
  - a. The old people join all categories of believers in Super-Grace in praising the Lord and having maximum Category I love Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  - b. With maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super-Grace they have a maximum capacity to enjoy the Lord in their later years **Ps 148:12-14**
  - c. Old people with maximum Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul have the greatest capacity for worship and praise.
- iii. They also will have great security and blessing from this Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace. **Ps 37:25**
  - a. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will never in their old age be ones who do not have perfect Logistical Grace support for their life.
- iv. Old people in Super-Grace also have great HONOR **Prov 17:6, 20:29**
- v. Old men in Super-Grace have dying grace blessing **Job 42:17, 1Chron 23:1, 29:28**
- vi. Old age is used as analogy for blessing the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace. **Is 46:4**
- vii. Old age is blessed in the millennium **Is 65:20, Joel 2:28, Zech 8:4**
- 8. Those in authority have often been ruined by ignoring the advice of older people **1Kings 12:6-8, + 13**
  - i. This often causes a life of disaster to the individual in authority but also to those under his authority.
- 9. Standards for Old People in the Royal Family of God **Titus 2:2-3**

**1Tim 5:2**

v2: (continued from v1) the older women, who are of highest quality in the eyes of God, should be treated with the same courtesy and respect as mothers, treat the younger ladies, who also are of highest quality in the eyes of God, like your sisters, with an attitude of all purity of soul in the sense of honor and integrity from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

**Lesson #72      Series # 467      1Tim 5:3**

- I. Freedom through military victory:
  - A. John S Walmsy, Cpt USAF,
  - B. Mathew Leonard, PT Sgt USArmy, B Company 1<sup>st</sup> of 16<sup>th</sup> Vietnam
- II. v3-6 relationship with widows in the Local Church.
  - A. There is no excuse for anyone who takes in Bible Doctrine on a regular basis to ever be subjective about ANYTHING in life.
    - 1. There should never be for the advanced believer any malfunction in any human relationship.
  - B. The most helpless of all categories of ladies is the widow.
    - 1. There is a reference here to all members of the Local Church including the Pastor Teacher in this case Timothy.
  - C. Implications of REALLY:
    - 1. All widows are actually not widows

- i. Some women are divorced and not really widows having asked for it and they were at fault.
  - a. Not ever in any divorce or failing relationship is any ONE person ever totally to blame.
  - b. There is always problems on both sides, bad judgment, bad action on both sides.
  - c. There is guilt on failure in a relationship always on both sides.
2. The women who are not actually widows are always trouble makers in the Local Church.
  - i. When a woman has been divorced generally the reason for her divorce is that she could not get along with anyone but was on an ego trip.
  - ii. She suffers from Blind Arrogance this causes her to become a trouble maker.
  - iii. This is not true of all widows but often times when a woman is divorced no matter her sad story the reality is that she is a fantastically egotistical arrogant woman and she has never in all her life thought about anyone else and is spoiled in the true sense of it.
  - iv. In reality then she is now a trouble maker for many whereas before she was trouble for only one man and now he is thankfully free and wiser.
3. The other type is also a trouble maker and not really a widow v11 and in v13 she is a gossip and busy body invading everyone's privacy.
4. There are certain types of women who appear to be humble and sweet when they actually want something.
  - i. Life is too short to put on a facade of any kind for anyone but everyone should know where they stand with you at all times.
5. These women always exist in every generation and always get sympathy from everyone, there are many of these women and they are dishonest, arrogant, without capacity for life and it is not worth one minute to be around her.
- D. Every Local Church should have a charity fund for widows.
  1. There are many who will never need any financial or other help from anyone ever.
  2. These are magnificent women and there are always magnificent women in every category of woman and there are always those who are anything BUT magnificent.
- E. We will see a great deal about LIVE and application of Bible Doctrine taught by PAUL.

### III. Doctrine of Widows:

- A. Definition:
  1. This is a woman who has lost her husband by death according to the BIBLE.
  2. This is also a woman who has legitimately divorced her husband under 1 of 4 counts:
  3. This is also a woman who has divorced her husband without any legitimate reason.
  4. This is always a woman who has had AT LEAST ONE HUSBAND.
  5. She is a female survivor of a marriage and here represents a very helpless individual and very dangerous situation as well.
  6. By getting to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God as a widow you WILL receive the 5 categories of Super-Grace blessings for time and surpassing grace for eternity as well.
  7. No woman who is under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine should ever be discouraged by this study.
- B. The principles of protection of the helpless apply to children and widows **Ex 22:22**
  1. God himself protects widows and orphans in the helpless category **Ps 68:5-6**
  2. The Lord protects strangers and supports orphans and widows **Ps 146:9**
  3. God punishes those who attack or abuse the helpless **Ps 94:6-12**
    - i. This came from the fact of abuse of widows orphans and strangers.
  4. Divine judgment is on those who bully and abuse the helpless **Mal 3:5**
- C. The law of the levirate marriage
  1. It was considered a tragedy in Israel for a man to die without an Heir.

2. It was desirable to perpetuate the name of everyone in Israel and avoid the inheritance transferring to another family.
3. Therefore a Law derived from (lat) Levir == Dead Man's or Husbands Brother.
4. It was the custom when a Jew died without a male heir that his nearest relative generally his brother should marry his widow and continue the family of the deceased man so that every family in Israel would be perpetuated.
5. The first born son of the marriage between the deceased man's brother and the man's widow would be the man's heir and perpetuate his line within the family.
6. Therefore the family name was perpetuated through this stated law **Deut 25:5-10**
7. A Premosaic law illustration:
  - i. Gen 38:6-11 dealing with Judah.
  - ii. This was used by Sadducee to discredit Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in **Matt 22:23-33**
    - a. These people did not believe in resurrection and tried to trap the Lord with the Levirate law setting up a situation where there were 7 brothers and the first 6 were husbands in sequence of this ONE Wife the widow of each one and #7 came along and married her.
    - b. They then said in resurrection who is really her husband???
8. Under this principle a widow was not a widow very long if the husband died without a male heir.

D. Widows are used in the condemnation of the Pharisees who were very religious and full of many various pious activities and had abused the most helpless class the widows **Matt 23:14, Mk 12:40, Luke 20:47**

1. These men were trying to impress people with their long prayers but they were stealing the money of the widow by using the law and impoverishing her.

E. Widows and the Origin of Deacons:

1. There was a problem in the Local Church with regard to widows and it resulted in the creation of Deacons **Acts 6:1-6**
  - i. This was neglect of Grecian widows which resulted in the formation of the first board of deacons to handle administration of the Local Church.
  - ii. The Pastor Teacher sets up a policy and the deacons administer the Local Church under that policy.

F. The apostle Paul advises widows to remain unmarried **1Cor 7:8-9**

G. Paul indicates the widows who are qualified for support in the Local Church and those who are trouble makers 1Tim 5:3-16

IV. Widows who are to not be supported:

A. One of the great things about our nation used to be how the parents or grand parents or other relatives always supported those who were unable to work.

1. It used to be a disgrace to have a relative who was on any kind of government dole.
2. Families took care of families in the past and in the depression era this was always true of Japanese Americans.
3. This is a principle of Laws of Divine Establishment for unbelievers and believers where relatives take care of relatives.

B. This category of widow is one who is old enough to qualify for church aid but has children or grandchildren who are to be the ones caring for her.

1. The children or grandchildren learn from the experience of supporting the widowed mother or grand mother
  - i. This is a command so that this category of woman is not to be enrolled on the charity list.
2. The children and grandchildren learn from supporting their mother or grandmother from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul thus learn from the balance of residence of Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Metabolized

Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul how to assume responsibility for the helpless.

3. Because of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and Filling of God the Holy Spirit these children or grandchildren are under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and willing to assume responsibility where even Laws of Divine Establishment require responsibility.
  4. This is the believer who assumes responsibility for all his obligations whether it is due to his word being his bond or that someone in his family is helpless and needs help.
- C. All believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace take responsibility whenever they must under every condition.
- D. Principle:
1. God is pleased with children or grandchildren who support their widowed mother or grandmother when necessary.
  2. Sin and Evil are totally different but there are places where Sin and Evil meet.
    - i. These meet at the point of Arrogance which joins with revolt and evil.
  3. Here we see Laws of Divine Establishment and Bible Doctrine actually meeting.
    - i. This is saying that the welfare state is **TOTALLY REJECTED BY THE WORD OF GOD WHILE CHARITY IS TOTALLY ACCEPTABLE.**
    - ii. The welfare state functions are **EVIL** and in fact will destroy the population of a nation.
    - iii. It will destroy the moral fiber and character and integrity of the citizens of the nation.
    - iv. Welfare state functions produce slaves to government and / or degenerate people.
  4. Here where Bible Doctrine and Laws of Divine Establishment meet it is both evil and sinful for the believer to neglect destitute members of your own family.
  5. The bible always rejects socialism which inevitably leads to intrusion on the privacy of the people in a nation and therefore destroys the freedom withing it.
  6. Welfare is sinful and evil while charity is Christian and a Laws of Divine Establishment function.
- E. Summary:
1. While not apparent on the surface this verse has a dynamic impact on Bible Doctrine.
  2. Not only does this verse recognize the Laws of Divine Establishment from God but also the importance of charity as originating in the family Divine Institution #3.
    - i. Charity then spreads to other places and it is not the same as welfare.
    - ii. Welfare stems from socialism while charity stems from truly helping the helpless.
  3. The responsibility for members of one's own family is a principle of Christian doctrine as well as one of the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  4. Where the widow as a believer has no surviving family she becomes the responsibility of the Local Church.
  5. If she is not a believer then she becomes a legitimate Ward of the State as a completely helpless person over 60 without any means of support, and this is **NOT** welfare nor socialism.
    - i. In Israel every 3<sup>rd</sup> year they took up a tax (a tithe) for the **POOR** of the land.
  6. This is bonifide charity in contrast to socialism or the welfare state function.
  7. There are 3 areas of responsibility in **CHARITY**:
    - i. The immediate family
    - ii. The Local Church for believers who are part of the Local Church.
    - iii. Government for truly helpless people in charity never welfare
  8. This is clearly understood by certain ethnic groups such as the Jews, Japanese, Germans who migrated to the United States.



9. This passage deals ONLY with the responsibility of the family and does not at this point cover church or government.
  - i. V3, 9, 10 will demonstrate under what circumstances a widow over 60 will become a ward of the Local Church.

**1Tim 5:3**

**v3: Continually Honor and treat graciously widows who are really widows providing charity when there is real need.**

**1Tim 5:4**

**v4: But If, and it is true, any widow by category over 60 (not to be supported) has children or grandchildren, let them, the children or grandchildren, learn, by practice or experience from someone who passes on this great tradition, above all godliness, the balance of residence of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, to assume responsibility and show respect to their own family and provide or give back charity of financial support to their parents or grandparents; for, you see, this deed of respectful charity remuneration support is pleasing in the sight of God.**

**Lesson #73                      Series # 467                      1Tim 5:3**

- I. Freedom through military victory:
  - A. George Andrew Davis Jr, Maj. USAF, (From Lubbock TX) Sinu Yallow River Korea 10 Feb 1952
  - B. Donald R. Moyer, Sgt 1<sup>st</sup> Class, US Army, Asst Platoon Leader, E Company, 35<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment Korea, 20 May 1951
- II. The Real widow who has past 60 years of age.
  - A. She is alone but has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God having very strong confidence.
    1. Her confidence in Bible Doctrine is more real than the adversity of her aloneness.
    2. She demonstrates an unusually strong faith rest and from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in her Stream of Consciousness of the Soul she has a strong reality in category I love Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ which offsets the adversity of her life.
  - B. She has ultimate confidence in God the best one to have confidence in and God has allowed her to remain alive in order to give her these circumstances of aloneness so that she can train and prepare others in the proper application of Bible Doctrine.
    1. She is also under strong occupation with a ministry of prayer.
    2. She is a person who is NOT in the mainstream of life in her time but has an incredible impact on the mainstream of life.
    3. The fact that people are old and out of the mainstream of life does not mean that life for them is over or that they are useless or a burden on society or others.
    4. Women like this are great assets to society and those in her periphery.
  - C. Principles:
    1. The widow represents those believers who have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and have been cut off from normal social interactions in life being out of the mainstream of life.
    2. Being a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace she is under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and is using it with maximum effectiveness.
    3. It becomes obvious that a person in this stage of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God she does not depend on people, things or circumstances for happiness.
      - i. This is an incredible spiritual achievement.
    4. She has past the point of youthful LUST for life and things but has not past capacity for life and happiness and she has BOTH.
    5. Such people as this widowed are neither to be pitied or deprecated.
    6. They are not the subject for condolence but congratulations.

- i. Out of the mainstream of life unknown, un-heralded yet highly and totally effective.
- 7. Her priestly life is occupied with persistent effective dynamic prayer.
- 8. Her service in the Royal Family of God is maximum and her recognition by others is minimal.
  - i. Recognition by OTHERS for any reason does not mean a damned thing.
  - ii. What other people think does not mean a thing it is only what GOD thinks which matters.
  - iii. There is no PR for these widows and no one write them up or talks about their successes.
- 9. These widows are totally content and have won the greatest victory of old age and GOD is the total source of their blessings and NO ONE on Earth can contribute any thing to their happiness.
- 10. Therefore they have reached OLD AGE and HELPLESSNESS without being obnoxious and they have avoided all the problems of Old Age.
- 11. Problems of Old age resulting from failure to take in Bible Doctrine:
  - i. No capacity for life resulting in vegetating in old age:
    - a. This in old age when there is no vigor, lack of mental sharpness results in terrible trouble.
    - b. Old people minus Bible Doctrine lose the power of concentration and memory and they tend to doze and dream and become vegetables.
  - ii. Disorientation to life with no capacity for life, blessing, grace all of which they have bypassed.
    - a. They have become indifferent to them.
  - iii. They have intensified Mental Attitude Sins with emphasis on vindictiveness and implacability.
  - iv. They lack a sense of security and are very unstable and poorly motivated.
  - v. Thoughtlessness, selfishness, demanding of attention.
  - vi. Being critical and unteachable.
  - vii. Defeated by time and become bored and trouble makers.

III. The contrast between the widow qualified for charity from the church and one who is NOT!

A. Doctrine of the Classification of DEATH:

- 1. Spiritual Death:
  - i. This is the first death we experience occurring when we are BORN.
  - ii. This is NO ability to have fellowship or relationship with God in time. **Rom 6:23**
  - iii. We are born with an Old Sin Nature and receive the imputation of Adam's Original Sin therefore are born physically alive and spiritually dead.
  - iv. It was the original penalty for Adam's Original Sin **Gen 2:17** and the continuous penalty for sin. **Eph 2:1, 5, Rom 5:12**
  - v. We are born spiritually dead being born in transgression and sin.
  - vi. The solution to spiritual death is Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone.
  - vii. This is separation from God in time.
- 2. Physical Death:
  - i. This is separation of the soul from the body.
  - ii. Whatever the cause of death occurs the person is actually dead when the soul leaves the body. **Matt 8:22 (Both spiritual and physical death here) Phil 1:20-21**
- 3. Second Death:
  - i. The perpetuation of spiritual death into eternity
  - ii. It is eternal separation from God in eternity in the Lake of Fire
  - iii. This is for the unbeliever ONLY and fallen angels **Heb 9:27, Rev 20:12-15**

- iv. The unbeliever at the Great White Throne Judgment are resurrected and judged by God, NOT EVER for their sins which were judged and paid for in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross, but for the things they did trying to substitute for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God by faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone.
  - v. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross died a spiritual death in substitution for us for SIN only he did not die for Human Good nor evil and rejected both.
  - vi. Spiritual death occurs at the point of physical birth and if we go through our whole life without Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone then the 2<sup>nd</sup> death occurs at the Great White Throne Judgment where he is condemned based on his human efforts not being equal to the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross and he is then cast into the Lake of Fire.
  - vii. Regeneration for the person who also is born with spiritual death cancels out this spiritual death when faith alone is expressed in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone.
  - viii. The believer by faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ by means of Grace has acquired eternal salvation and Eternal Life.
4. Positional Death:
- i. By means of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit the Church Age believer in the Royal Family of God is identified with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in his death.
  - ii. This is retroactive positional truth, **Rom 6, Col 2;12, 3:3**
5. Reversionistic Death:
- i. This is the believer in reversionism under the influence of evil. **James 2:26, Eph 5:14, Rev 3:1, 1Tim 5:6**
    - a. This is saying doctrine without production is dead.
    - b. With Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the believer can have an effective spiritual life and great production from Prayer or any other function.
  - ii. These are believers living who in fact are dead from being in reversionism and under the influence of evil following the stages of reversionism.
6. Carnal Death: **Rom 8:6, 13, James 1:15,**
- i. This is the believer out of fellowship because of Sin.
  - ii. This is not the same as reversionistic death as evil and sin are not the same.
  - iii. This must be distinguished from Reversionistic death.
  - iv. You put to death the deeds of the Old Sin Nature in the Spiritual Life by use of the rebound procedure.
  - v. The prodigal son is the example of this **Luke 15:24**
    - a. This passage indicates that the prodigal son was both CARNAL and REVERSIONISTIC.
  - vi. Many times Carnal death uses overlap with Reversionistic death.
  - vii. This occurs because a person who is persistent in carnality inevitably gets into reversionism and this inevitably puts him under the influence of EVIL.
  - viii. Therefore Carnal and Reversionistic Death are VERY CLOSELY related.
  - ix. In addition to being under carnal death the reversionist eventuates in getting under physical death also as this is the final, terribly painful, Divine Discipline for reversionism.
7. Sexual Death:
- i. The inability to copulate **Rom 4:16-21, Gen 17:5**
  - ii. Abram's sexual death was reversed by God in order that Abraham could fulfill the promises of God in formation of Jews.

IV. The process of the reversionistic death of the widow:

- A. She has gone about a process starting with carnality, then leading to reversionistic death through the stages of reversionism until she is totally under the influence of EVIL.
  - 1. Certain widows become reversionistic in their frustration of being widowed and eventually come under the tremendous influence of evil.
  - 2. This woman has totally given self up to selfishness which excludes Bible Doctrine and this destroys her life while she is living.
- B. Summary:
  - 1. This not only applies to this specific case in context of the widow but also applies in other areas of the Spiritual Life running parallel to this:
    - i. Believers who live only for pleasure and self gratification are the living dead,
    - ii. As soon as one gets under the influence of evil they become the living dead.
  - 2. In this passage the category is WIDOW but this principle applies to all members in the Royal Family of God who become involved in reversionism.
  - 3. Reversionism involves a Frantic Search for Happiness and couples with the influence of Evil to result in the Christian Zombie or Living Dead Believer.
  - 4. Without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the believer has no capacity for life, love, happiness, prosperity nor adversity.
    - i. He has no capacity to appreciate God nor grace and with these other lacks of capacity he is a Zombie.
  - 5. The sooner that life brings us to Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ maximum Category I Love for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - 6. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is the Status Quo of the believer in the Royal Family of God in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - 7. Obviously the Christian zombie has rejected and neglected the principle of the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - 8. This might be called Zombie Reversionism.
  - 9. Zombie Reversionism is the believer so glutted with pleasure in the Status Quo of reversionism and so under the influence of evil that NO pleasure in life or all accumulated pleasures in life leaves him totally dissatisfied.
  - 10. To be minus Metabolized Bible Doctrine and its capacities is to be the living dead reversionist waiting under Divine Discipline for the maximum Divine Discipline in the Sin Unto Death.
  - 11. These believers go from being living dead in time to peons in eternity and no real fun in time.

V. Pastors responsibility in the field of Human Relationships: v7

- A. This is a pause to relate all this to Timothy who is guilty of Malpractice in the field of relationships especially this widow.
  - 1. Whatever the problem was in Ephesus with the widow Timothy should have been straightening it out and WAS NOT.
  - 2. The Pastor Teacher is the overseer of deacons in their administration of the Local Church and if their administration includes malpractice then he should step in.
  - 3. Timothy should also be teaching these things to the congregation since he has the responsibility as well.
- B. When problems occur in the congregation Timothy is expected to and SHOULD BE giving commands to fix the problems.
  - 1. He must use his authority and is here commanded to command.
  - 2. Being a wimp Timothy or any one who is and has authority and is put under pressure when they lack ability they fail.

3. This is the Status Quo of the United States military where by any of the high ranking officers today are basically failures and would not even make a good Sgt.
    - i. These officers today are card punchers and all they want is to gain higher rank and in the army today with the poor level of organization there is very little chance to command.
    - ii. They are trying to simply log enough time in command to move up and given pressure they would simply fall apart.
  4. Leadership in any profession when they gain authority they must also have ABILITY to command.
    - i. Ability to command means thorough knowledge of the profession and also above all else to have the moral courage to give a correct command no matter what it costs and to stick with it and pursue it vigorously.
- C. The fact that deacons are not handling the administration of widows properly demonstrates that Timothy is extremely weak and has not set policies under which these deacons can administer.
1. Timothy has made no policy and he is pitiful and is a coward.
  2. When deacons falter in the Local Church this is always because there is not command policy under which they can function for administering.
  3. The emphasis here is again placed on the Pastor Teacher who is to take command of the Local Church and enforce biblical principles regarding all aspects of the Local Church.
  4. The Pastor Teacher must be responsible for his congregation and this is a command responsibility and why YOUNG men have difficulty in operating an effective congregation not having experience enough in command.
  5. The key to taking command is to set up a policy on which to command which is to be based on Bible Doctrine.
  6. If Bible Doctrine is taught in an expository manner then there will be strong policy under which to administer.
  7. Grace Policy & Authority of the Pastor Teacher & Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ & Avoidance of all these problems which come will be avoided by the faithful consistent teaching of Bible Doctrine.

**1Tim 5:5**

**v5: But, the one who is really a widow, past 60, even they one who has been left alone has strong confidence in Bible Doctrine and upon The God, she also from the past continually persists no matter the situation in personal petitions and intercessory prayers night and day.**

**1Tim 5:6**

**v6: But the widow who started in the past and lives constantly indulging in sensual pleasure, living voluptuously, riotously, in self-indulgence is in reversionistic death under the influence of evil, while she is still alive.**

**1Tim 5:7**

**v7: Also, Timothy, be commanding these things, in order that they, the deacons handling the administration of widows, may be without reproach.**

**Lesson #74      Series # 467      1Tim 5:8; Heb 13:7**

- I. Memorial Day May 30, 1975
  - A. Gilbert C Collier, Sgt US Army F Company, 223 Infantry Regiment 40<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, Tutian Korea 19-20 July 1953
  - B. Henry A Komisky Sr, 1<sup>st</sup> Lt USMC, C Company, 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion, 1<sup>st</sup> Marines 1<sup>st</sup> Marines Division, Yong FU Korea 20 Sept 1950
- II. Authority of the Pastor Teacher continued:
  - A. Principle on which pastors are commanded to command
    1. Any member of any Local Church are subject to the authority of the Pastor Teacher of that Local Church.
    2. This is the purest of authority which starts in heaven itself and goes right down to the Pastor Teacher where he is responsible to God himself directly.

3. Being part of the Local Church means you must recognize the authority of the Pastor Teacher and subject yourself to that authority.
  4. It is to the benefit of the Royal Family of God to recognize and subject oneself to the authority of the Pastor Teacher.
  5. Every believer in the Church Age is a royal priest and therefore must recognize the importance of spiritual growth and reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and his royal priesthood whereby he can advance in his royal function:
    - i. Overt authority which God has delegated to the Royal Family of God in the bible.
      - a. This authority is no good for anything UNTIL it is communicated and transferred to the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer where it becomes usable and applicable and where it contributes to your spiritual growth.
    - ii. The second authority set up for the transfer is the Pastor Teacher Guardian of the Local Church.
    - iii. The Local Church can be anywhere and it is the classroom for the spiritual growth of the Royal Family of God.
- B. What we are to keep obeying is one of the sacrifices of the royal priesthood, and we operate as part of the royal priesthood on sacrifices constantly.
1. The Sacrifice of the intake of Bible Doctrine.
    - a. This is daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and is the basic function of the royal priesthood.
    - ii. This Bible Doctrine sacrifice is impossible without the sacrifice of Rebound procedure function **Rom 12:1-2**
    - iii. This also involves the ability to focus and concentrate on the part of the word of God being taught.
  2. As a result of this we build an altar in the soul on which we can offer other sacrifices.
    - i. One of the first of these is the sacrifice of Separation Heb 13:13, where we separate ourselves from many things as we are persistent in our intake of Bible Doctrine such as:
      - a. Evil
      - b. Things related to Negative Volition
      - c. Reversionism
    - ii. This is done in order to allow us to concentrate and focus on that related to Bible Doctrine.
      - a. There comes a time in life when we are tested with various types of separation where failure to pass this test results in an inevitable setback in the Spiritual Life.
  3. There is a sacrifice of Praise from having Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul Heb 13:15.
    - i. It is impossible to be under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ with Category I Love unless there is maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - ii. Praise is the appreciation of who and what God is and who and what Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is and the capacity for Category I Love Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
    - iii. This is a form of worship and of function of the royal priesthood.
  4. There is also a sacrifice of Academic Discipline **Heb 13:7**
  5. There is the sacrifice of Prayer which is the result of this **Heb 13:18-19**
  6. These sacrifices result in the proper function of the royal priesthood.
- C. Ruling here is related to guiding, governing and communication **1Tim 5:17** has a management word for ruling

1. The Pastor Teacher is the ruler of the Local Church having as his primary function the exercising of his authority in the Local Church to promote the teaching of Bible Doctrine.
  2. Timothy has constantly failed in this respect.
  3. The authority of the Pastor Teacher is established based on the faithful and accurate teaching of Bible Doctrine. **1Tim 5:17**
    - i. **The Pastor Teacher** will be honored if he is faithful in the execution of these responsibilities.
- D. All members of the Royal Family of God will be under the authority of some Pastor Teacher
1. Our responsibility is to ensure that the Pastor Teacher whom we are under is teaching accurately the word of God else our time under his authority will be in vain with regard to spiritual growth.
  2. It is only through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul that we can grow up in the Spiritual Life and function properly in it and it is only in this way that we can glorify God.
  3. There must be authority to communicate Bible Doctrine in order for spiritual growth to occur, God has designed and delegated that authority and our responsibility as part of the Royal Family of God is to submit to it and this submission comes from CONSISTENT intake of Bible Doctrine.
  4. We follow what the authority is designed to do when we submit ourselves to the teaching of Bible Doctrine.
  5. The key to learning Bible Doctrine is amenability to discipline and self discipline is the key to everything in life especially the capacity for life.
  6. In that generation of 1975 and SO MUCH MORE TODAY, the importance of self discipline has been greatly overlooked.
    - i. It used to be taught in the homes and schools and military but all of these have been set aside as the vehicles for learning self discipline.
    - ii. People are therefore running lose as a law to themselves on great ego trips and PRIDE is cut down by self discipline preventing rampant egomania.
    - iii. Suppressing this egomania reinvigorates any population and we have lost this function.
- E. Key Factors in learning Bible Doctrine:
1. You must have a positive attitude toward Bible Doctrine therefore Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine.
    - i. This is the realization that Bible Doctrine is more important than even the air that you breathe and NOTHING is more important than the intake of Bible Doctrine.
    - ii. This Mental Attitude motivates Positive Volition under agonizing circumstances
    - iii. Most people gravitate to Bible Doctrine when things are bad for them but when they are prospering from some blessing from God they generally fall apart and then neglect Bible Doctrine.
    - iv. It is the person who can stand up under prosperity that inevitably comes from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and it is this person who makes it in life and has capacity for life as for dying and ends up under dying grace and an incredible series of decorations for all eternity.
  2. There must be the expression of Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine by the consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception for daily Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
    - i. We must remember that we must have daily consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
    - ii. In the ancient world they only met once or twice a week but when they did meet they had bible class for at least 8 hours.

- iii. In order to express Positive Volition consistently you must be able to identify your own right Pastor Teacher just as the Pastor Teacher must be able to identify his right congregation of sheep.
  - iv. People who fall apart and use any excuse to miss bible class are not demonstrating Positive Volition in any way.
3. Consistently being under Filling of God the Holy Spirit without which we cannot be objective in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
- i. Everyone get hit by the understanding and inculcation of Bible Doctrine when it directly opposes some part of our background or personality and we MUST remain objective and NEVER become subjective about it.
  - ii. We cannot become hypersensitive about what Bible Doctrine is teaching us and think the Pastor Teacher is focused on your personal problems.
  - iii. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit provides objectivity and reinforces the Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and is the only means of real concentration on Bible Doctrine.
  - iv. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit instinctively gives good manners and poise whether there has been training in this area or NOT!
  - v. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit comes back to us through the use of the rebound procedure.
4. Objectivity toward the Pastor Teacher as an individual.
- i. It is always possible at some time or another to come into mental conflict with the one who is communicating Bible Doctrine.
  - ii. Therefore there must objectivity toward the personality, grooming, or speaking or character of the Pastor Teacher
  - iii. This is where preconceived ideas of what a sweet pastor should are of no value to any of us at all.
  - iv. SWEET Pastor Teachers never make it and PAUL needed to BEAT the sweetness out of Timothy so that he could stand up and be a man.
  - v. You cannot have a flock of sheep congregation and be sweet and let everyone run over you and this type of sweetness is what people associate with Christianity but this is NOT commanded by God.
    - a. There is a sweetness which comes from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Filling of God the Holy Spirit and it is worth while related to capacity for life and love.
  - vi. There must be concentration on the message not the man giving the message or anything about him.
5. OBJECTIVITY and continued Positive Volition through all kinds of passages whether interested in the subject or not.
- i. Some times the subject is not interesting to a believer personally or the content of the message seems to be irrelevant and then the trend is to be CRITICAL of the content or grammar or style of communication or vocabulary which often is not euphemistic or obscure enough when it concerns socially sensitive topics.
6. Believer must have patience when hearing Bible Doctrine when it is something he does not understand.
- i. And the believer must be able to wait until the doctrine presented answers the questions or lack of understanding he has.
  - ii. Sooner or later all questions are answered.
  - iii. Inability to follow an article very closely or follow the grammar carefully and the patience to wait to see how these things form the true meaning of a passage.
  - iv. Just as the Pastor Teacher has to be patient with the congregation so the congregation must also be patient with the Pastor Teacher.
7. Every believer MUST have privacy in public assembly to LEARN.



- i. So we can put our grace provision in proper perspective with regard to our right Pastor Teacher the Col in his lesson related a story where in his school in his class in the 4<sup>th</sup> grade the school kept giving the Stanford Achievement test over and over about 4 times because they could not believe that in a class of about 30 children more than ½ had Genius IQs. His final comment was that the school finally stopped giving the test and he was for one happy about that because he was BORED with taking the tests.....
  - ii. In schools when children are ridiculed in front of their peers and even in adults when this occurs they STOP LEARNING having no privacy in learning.
  - iii. When you are ridiculed in front of the congregation then you stop learning at that point because you have no privacy.
  - iv. You must have and give privacy when in public assembly.
  - v. This is part of the concept of Live and let LIVE and there will be a doctrine of privacy as well.
  - vi. If you are going to learn Bible Doctrine there must be privacy of your priesthood and you must never be singled out and be embarrassed.
  - vii. There therefore is NO Dialogue but only monologue and you have privacy and every Local Church should give privacy in the extreme and never should you be required to fill out visitors cards or wear visitors badges or tell people you “love” them, or to do something which calls attention to self.
  - viii. Therefore we see that Objectivity and privacy go together for proper learning.
  - ix. The Local Church should be dedicated to the proper function of the Local Church that being PRIVACY for learning Bible Doctrine NOT EVER a social club for people or children.
8. The believer must have good manners which is thoughtfulness for those in the congregation.
    - i. The believer must not create any disturbance such as through body movements as well as vocally.
    - ii. There must be no talking or discussing a message while it is being taught this is simply RUDE.
    - iii. Believers must not get up to move around during a message except in dire emergencies.
    - iv. There must be courtesy in ingress and egress and in the parking lot.
  9. The believer must exercise maximum self discipline by concentration on the message.
  10. The believer must understand the grace principle of giving and be willing to give without coercion to support the administrative functions of the Local Church.
    - i. This is part of the function of the royal priesthood and there should be NO emotional appeals.
    - ii. You won't be blessed by God for tithing which is a system of taxation and what you give is between you and the Lord it is no one's business.
    - iii. If the Local Church runs out of money the doors simply should be closed without any comment.
  11. All these functions come through and are necessary for spiritual growth and they are rotated around and develop each other as growth occurs.
- F. The Pastor Teacher has his own system to protect the souls of the congregation.
1. The believers soul is the battleground in life in the Angelic Conflict.
  2. The soul is either influenced by EVIL or Bible Doctrine and you will either GROW in the Spiritual Life or RECEDE to reversionism
  3. The Pastor Teacher is the key to transfer Bible Doctrine into your soul so you can be under the influence of Bible Doctrine.
  4. The Pastor Teacher has to render an account to a higher authority with regard to YOUR soul and your progress in the Spiritual Life.

5. God constantly is making out an efficiency rating for every Pastor Teacher which determines whether he stays or goes with regard to his continued ministry.
  - i. The Pastor Teacher obviously then has his own blessings and reward based on his ratings.

**Heb 13:7**

**v7: Royal Family of God, Be constantly thinking about, concentrating on, remembering, obeying and sticking with those, Pastor Teachers, who themselves as expert leaders guide you through doctrine and rule and govern with authority by policy first enucleated from Bible Doctrine, over you in the Royal Family of God, who are such a high quality category, who have communicated the word FROM THE God, Bible Doctrine to your greatest advantage; from the source of whom, you are to be imitating or emulating THEIR DOCTRINE and still retain your individuality, concentrating on the doctrine when tempted to leave the Local Church and Pastor Teacher carefully considering the end of the issue of their manner of life to reach Ultra Super-Grace.**

**Heb 13:17**

**v17: Keep obeying those pastors who themselves are ruling over you and submit to their authority; for these same ones, Pastor Teachers, keep watching being alert for the benefit for your souls, as those who have to render an account. Keep obeying them that they may do this accounting with joy or inner happiness and not with groaning for this accounting with groaning will be unprofitable for you as discipline for the congregation and future loss of reward.**

III. Timothy's failure led to a failure in family responsibility in the congregation in Ephesus.

- A. Here is the head of a household who under the influence of evil in reversionism has not provided for his family.
  1. This can be from bleeding heart altruism giving in sacrifice to missionaries or the Local Church while depriving his family because of some emotional appeal of a missionary or Pastor Teacher and this is NOT sacrificial giving but EVIL to deprive a family to give to anyone.
  2. This person is far worse than an unbeliever.
  3. There should not ever be emotional giving and families who are living from paycheck to paycheck borderline in poverty are often deprived because of this bleeding heart altruism.
  4. THIS IS EVIL WHEN A BELIEVER GIVES HIS MONEY AWAY ON SOME EMOTIONAL APPEAL FROM SOMEONE.
    - i. Missionaries, or building funds, etc.
  5. This lacks good common sense and providing for families with proper insurance for them after his death.
    - i. When God gives a man responsibility for a family with wife and children he OUGHT to provide for them and that is his first responsibility NOT getting himself approved for giving to various charities.
    - ii. This also applies to compulsive gamblers as well who are the worst.
  6. Some men are simply selfish and self centered SOB's and have no business raising a family.
- B. In every generation among believers who are in reversionism and under the influence of evil there are those who do not provide for their families properly.
  1. They are involved in something that prevents them from doing so which is evil or related to reversionism
    - i. This can be Christian giving even sacrificial giving which was never to cause one's family to be starved or be poorly clothed.
  2. The divine attitude toward these men is that he has denied, refused, disowned or repudiated Bible Doctrine resulting in his reversionism leading to rejecting his responsibility to his family.
  3. This is any believer who is involved in some evil thing in reversionism so that he has failed in the proper support and provision for his family.
- C. Principles:
  1. 2 doctrines are needed to understand this verse, Reversionism and Evil and both explain why men come to this situation.

- i. The sweet sincere young believer becomes an SOB under the influence of evil and reversionism.
2. These 2 doctrines are 2 sides of the same coin called apostasy.
3. Reversionism is the mechanics of apostasy while the influence of evil is the result of apostasy.
4. This believer has entered into some stage of reversionism where he is giving money which deprives his family of proper Food, Shelter or Clothing.
5. In the 2<sup>nd</sup> stage of reversionism it could be he was exhausting his financial resources in the Frantic Search for Happiness.
6. In the 2<sup>nd</sup> or 4<sup>th</sup> stages it could be emotional giving or compulsive gambling which exhausts the family treasury and results in starvation.
7. The influence of evil always results in one many either giving or gambling or spending his money so that his entire family is impoverished, starving in rags suffering because of his stupidity in handling money.
8. This is why compulsive gamblers should NEVER marry.
9. This is why Emotional Revolt of the Soul is incapable of any relationship in life or taking responsibility.
10. On the other side is the fact that some insurance programs give poor or moderate income men a chance to provide for their families.

#### **1Tim 5:8**

**v8: If, however, any one of a certain category, in reversionism or being influence by evil, does not provide for his own relatives, especially most of all for his own family, and they do, he has denied, refused, disowned the doctrine with the result that he has repudiated Bible Doctrine also he keeps on being more evil than an unbeliever.**

#### **Lesson #75      Series # 467      1Tim 5:9**

- I. Application in Human Relationships continued:
  - A. Hebrews should be followed by 1<sup>st</sup> Timothy and this book shows more practical applications than almost any other and every possible problem occurred for him since he was such a failure in the beginning.
  - B. This is one of the greatest reprimands for the pastor in the history of the church and he was the greatest failure ever.
  - C. Doctrines in Timothy include:
    1. Practical Applications:
      - i. Capacity for Life, Love and Happiness from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
      - ii. This brings you to being able to have a relationship with people of all ages and all categories.
- II. Application Principles:
  - A. There are numerous cases within the framework of reversionism where believers under the influence of evil are MORE evil than the unbeliever.
    1. Emotional Giving from emotional appeals.
      - i. This keeps a man from providing for his own family.
    2. Evil Altruism which deprives a family of its needs:
      - i. Operation Bleeding Heart where you GIVE to charities which pay their administrators huge salaries the example given was to give to the orphans from Vietnam or other places the government brings over with our tax money.
    3. Frantic Search for Happiness by spending in a way that deprives the family of necessities.
    4. Compulsive Gambling or Drinking or Drug Addition thus depriving family of necessities.
    5. Loss of a sense of responsibility through reversionism
    6. Irresponsible stupidity in getting married when you shouldn't and failing when you do.

- i. Sexual Relationship with the spouse which produces many children when you cannot even afford ONE.
  - 7. Over-extension in business or investment without using capital to make provision for family or other loved ones.
- B. Whatever the mechanics the cause is the same:
  - 1. A Male believer who rejects Bible Doctrine and enters reversionism and comes under the influence of evil and fails to provide for his own.
- C. The growing or mature believer in Super-Grace never falls into this situation.
  - 1. Especially in this time in history where so many things are available for the poorer man to provide for his family through insurance and other applications.
  - 2. There never has been less excuse for anyone to fail to provide for his own.
  - 3. This is only an extension of the principle of taking responsibility for your decisions for your life and your own actions as part of capacity for life.
  - 4. Life is wonderful and a great challenge and is a lot of fun once you learn to have capacity for life and take responsibility for your decisions in life and live life as unto the lord.
  - 5. Under these circumstances there is no such thing as a boring life.
- D. The reversionistic believer practicing any form of evil becomes more evil than any unbeliever.
  - 1. The unbeliever breaks just the Laws of Divine Establishment in going into unbeliever reversionism and coming under the influence of evil, BUT the believer in addition to breaking through Laws of Divine Establishment also breaks through and away from all the principles of Bible Doctrine by which he should be living as part of the Royal Family of God.
  - 2. It is inevitable that the unbeliever are not nearly as evil as the believer.
- E. Why?! Because the believer has more safeguards than the unbeliever with regard to evil.
  - 1. He has Bible Doctrine as well as the Laws of Divine Establishment to protect him from this.
  - 2. While the unbeliever is limited to his own integrity and the Laws of Divine Establishment the believer who repudiates Bible Doctrine always becomes more evil than any unbeliever.
  - 3. This is true in every stage of reversionism.
  - 4. The believer in reversionism IS more evil than any unbeliever BUT he cannot and DOES NOT lose his salvation.

### III. Enrollment of Qualified Widows v9-10

- A. The Widow is a category of helpless individuals
  - 1. However some widows are not helpless at all and in fact are DANGEROUS.
  - 2. They are totally capable of taking care of self and not matter where they fall they always land on their feet.
- B. Timothy as a bachelor and one who did not understand women at all and was in fact in fear of them did not understand at all the chaos which had broken out in his own Local Church in Ephesus.
  - 1. They were having a problem as to who should be supported by the church and who not and how they should be supported.
  - 2. In this regard Socialism and Welfare state functions are EVIL while charity from 3 sources is a bonifide system.
- C. Principles of Charity in the Local Church:
  - 1. This passage does not teach the existence of deaconesses which are absolutely NOT authorized and the greatest thing to complicate the administration of any Local Church.
  - 2. The enrollment is for charity and support of Widows over 60 who would be otherwise destitute.
  - 3. The age of 60 indicates that by that time all other sources of income have disappeared and in the case of a believer widow who is otherwise qualified she becomes the Ward of her Local Church.

4. Her helplessness which requires financial help from the shepherding committee of the Local Church would only be considered after age 60.
  5. This implies that women under 60 years of age should not be given charity since they will up to that age have other means of support.
  6. Widows to be qualified must be over 60 years of age
    - i. This would eliminate some of the other church deceptions which occurred right under timothy's nose where they were using funds from the Local Church to take care of many things not authorized by the word of God and some older unattractive ladies were left out while younger more attractive ladies were included.
    - ii. This was Timothy being weak and cowardly without moral courage.
- D. The woman MUST arrive at age 60 before they qualify.
1. This is the definitive example of what the early church was like and they were bumbling idiots by and large and if it had not been for the STRONG hand of Paul we may not have Christians at all today.
  2. In addition the woman must have been married ONLY ONCE.
    - i. This was set up to indicate some stability factor in the background of the woman.
  3. In addition there would be the necessity for Maturity with a lack of promiscuity or approbation lust.
  4. The enrollment of the widow on the charity list of the Local Church implied some function around the Local Church which required stability.
- E. There were 3 sources of legitimate charity in this time frame:
1. Family or Relatives
    - i. Children or grand children
  2. State or Government
    - i. The 3<sup>rd</sup> year tax or tithe for charity
  3. Local Church for certain believers
  4. These are all legitimate sources for providing for older people who are destitute.
- F. The principle of Old Age goes for Widows as well:
1. They can have just as wonderful a life as anyone and under Metabolized Bible Doctrine her capacity for life, love and happiness are just as great as any other believers and no one should ever feel sorry for her.
- G. The conditional clauses in the Greek:
1. Always they are statements of supposition the fulfillment of which is assumed to secure the realization of the potential fact.
  2. The clause contain the supposition is the Prodasis occurring first and introduced by IF.
    - i. There are 4 types in the New Testament Scripture.
      - a. 1<sup>st</sup> class == IF and it is true
      - b. 2<sup>nd</sup> class == IF and NOT true
      - c. 3<sup>rd</sup> class == IF and Maybe YES and Maybe NO
      - d. 4<sup>th</sup> class == IF and I wish it were but it is NOT true.
    - ii. These always have a great deal to do with understanding of the passage they are in.
  3. The clause containing the statement based on the supposition is the Apotasis which is where the conclusion is derived.
    - i. It is rare for the Apotasis to come first but in v10 it does.
  4. These in v10 are 1<sup>st</sup> class conditions and are from the supposition of reality and truth.
  5. There is an administrative standard where by these must be TRUE before the widow is qualified for Local Church charity.
  6. Administration is not some emotional idiotic activity as it true in many Local Churches today but in fact must be a very organized well thought out system handled by believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

7. The key to understanding the conditional clauses is the IF and the Mood of the Verb.
- H. Not all married ladies have children and many times people are wise and refrain from having children.
1. The fact that having children is considered virtuous is a result of the Human Race wanting to continue.
  2. Most of the time pregnancy is an accident in the first place and merely an afterthought.
  3. The idea that just because you have many children you are something special is idiotic and part of religious thinking which is EVIL
    - i. There is nothing good about religion never has been and never will be.
- I. Therefore the qualified widow must have been a good mother.
1. To be a good mother the widow should have been involved in Training, teaching, influencing, inculcating both spiritual and physical areas of life.
  2. This means that the male children should be properly oriented to how to treat the female.
    - i. These young boys must be taught to respect their mothers and be gentlemen at all times and this does not reflect WEAKNESS.
    - ii. Many men fail in the whole field regarding women concerning love, sex, companionship etc because they did not respect their mother or she did not teach them how to be gentlemen around women.
    - iii. The attitude of a young man is reflected in the first 9 years of his life and his attitude toward his mother.
  3. For the daughter the mother has a great influence also and her influence determines whether the daughter will become a lying deceiving bitch or eventually becomes a magnificent Lady.
  4. Fathers never have enough time to train the children in the KEY years up to age 9 and the mothers are the key to everything for the children.
  5. Therefore any widow who has been a sloppy disorganized ineffective mother is not qualified for charity from the Local Church.
- J. The widow also has to have been one who has demonstrated hospitality for her adult life from marriage and motherhood up to the time of her inclusion on the charity list of the Local Church.
1. This means the type of character which is outgoing and objective.
  2. Inhospitable people are subjective people who may entertain but always do a bad job of it and do something which embarrasses others.
  3. It is in fact an attitude of integrity of soul and of being outgoing and thoughtful of others and sensitive to the needs of others and not subjective in any way.
- K. She is to have washed the feet of anyone in the Royal Family of God:
1. The washing of feet by Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in **John 13:4-20** has nothing to do with the Church Age.
  2. This was to teach a principle of Bible Doctrine for every dispensation but not a command to continue the ritual of washing the feet.
  3. In John 13:4-20 the disciples had been guilty of a breach of etiquette and they had entered the upper room with unwashed feet.
  4. They had walked through the streets of the city where they had accumulated DUST and SEWAGE on their feet and came into the upper room where they were about to observe the Passover in this condition.
  5. They had stinky feet and were an offensive group to the Lord from their poor etiquette but also were malodorous as well.
  6. They were preoccupied with a debate as to which of them was the greatest one that none of them would wash the feet of anyone else when they came in refusing to take the place of a servant and wash one another's feet before entering. **Luke 22:24**
- L. Therefore Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ washed all their feet demonstrating the principle that **GREATNESS CANNOT EXIST APART FROM FLEXIBILITY, GRACE HUMILITY.**

1. There is never an issue of degrading oneself in any way EVER since GREAT people are never degraded and in their souls they have principles of Bible Doctrine, character and integrity so that they cannot be degraded.
  2. Not even degrading circumstances can degrade a great person.
  3. Only blind arrogance is degraded by degrading circumstances and this is a matter and sign of PRIDE.
  4. It is a sign of arrogance when you feel degraded when put into a circumstance where you are humbled in some way or ridiculed or criticized.
  5. They day a person cannot learn from legitimate criticism and bonifide correction is the day they have lost all contact with the reality of life.
  6. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ used this to demonstrate this fact the washing the feet of these men did not detract from the greatness of the Lord nor remove his integrity and it did not remove anything from his soul and he continued to be even greater than he was before.
  7. This indicates the fact that **THERE IS NO CIRCUMSTANCE IN LIFE WHICH CAN DEGRADE YOU UNLESS YOU HAVE THE INGREDIENTS FOR DEGRADATION IN YOUR SOUL.**
  8. Poise and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will carry you through every circumstance of life.
  9. In addition there is an analogy in the washing of the disciples feet by our Lord as well and the disciples had bathed before coming to the last supper and this is a picture or example of salvation.
  10. The idea is ONCE BATHED Always bathed as an analogy for salvation, ONCE saved always saved.
  11. They did not have to bathe again in the upper room.
- M. It was customary to wash one's feet before entering a home or hall in the ancient world and this is an analogy to rebound.
1. One bath and Once there is salvation
  2. Many foot washings and many rebounds.
  3. The filth on the feet of the disciples is analogous to carnality and they could not have fellowship with the Lord and have dirty feet simultaneously.
  4. Therefore Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ washed their feet and this was analogous to the provision for rebound by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross.
  5. John 13:15 Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ commanded rebound NOT foot washing.
  6. The heritage of grace is perpetuated through rebound not foot washing.
  7. The significance of foot washing is in the doctrinal analogy to rebound procedure.
  8. In John 13:16, Jesus emphasized the importance of Grace Orientation and taking the place of servant.
- N. Relief Help or Aid or assist for the afflicted others in distress
1. These people are benefited by her care and help.
- O. She must be devoted to and involved in intrinsic good production
1. This means production totally divorced from evil and reversionism.
  2. It means production based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul under the principle of the balance of residence.
  3. It is production from the Super-Grace life the balance of residence.
  4. It is production which is sacrificed on the altar of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the royal priesthood (probably should be ambassador).
    - i. The production is the actual offering on the altar of doctrine.
    - ii. This means that first there must be an altar constructed by maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

5. This is production divorced from apostasy, religionism, reversionism.
  - P. These women were over 60 and had demonstrated Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God prior to their consideration for charity.
- IV. V11-15 The reason for this age requirement:
- A. It may appear cruel to set 60 as an age requirement and an impossible set of standards.
    1. In Ephesus there were those who do not qualify for charity.
    2. The standard distinguishes between widows over 60 qualified for Local Church charity and young widows who are not qualified for the charity from the Local Church.
  - B. The deacon board MUST without emotional involvement definitely refuse charity to YOUNGER widows under 60 year of age.
    1. This must be only based on biblical principles.
  - C. The reasoning behind this is based on the desire of younger women who are widowed to remarry.
    1. The younger widows become so distracted by their sexual impulses that they become apathetic toward Bible Doctrine and Christ and enter into an adult stage of being Man Crazy.
    2. They lose Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and enter reversionism and become adult man crazy.
    3. Reversionism moves the young widow from Super-Grace and she loses Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, capacity for life and love and becomes obsessed with the male of the species.
    4. These women under the pressure of intense sexual desire and are totally irrational thus marry the first male they are attracted to and forget about Christ, Jesus and Bible Doctrine.
  - D. Principles:
    1. Category II love can be a distraction to category I Love and this is true in young widows.
    2. The young widow in the stage of man craziness is worst of all.
    3. This widow so effected loses all her perspective and discernment from Bible Doctrine or common sense.
    4. She usually makes a mistake in marriage or has an affair with a jackass.
    5. The only reason for Cat II distracting from Cat I love is reversionism from neglect of Bible Doctrine.

**1Tim 5:9**

**v9: Widows can be enrolled in the church charity list having become not less than sixty years of age, the wife of one husband, or married only once;**

**1Tim 5:10**

**v10: she must be endorsed; as a part of administration functions as being under the right standard for qualification for charity; well attested, approved, verified or certified as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with a dynamic Spiritual Life, by honorable accomplishments of Super-Grace production, IF, it is true, throughout her life, she has brought up, supported, educated, reared children WELL, IF, it is true, throughout her life, she has demonstrated hospitality, IF, it is true, throughout her life, she has a Relaxed Mental Attitude and Grace Orientation from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in her Stream of Consciousness of the Soul taking the place of serving without feeling degraded, maintained poise through all circumstances of life (which would be considered degrading) as in washing the feet of all kinds of saints, Royal Family of God , IF, it is true, throughout her life, she has relieved, helped, assisted or aided those in distress, being oppressed or afflicted, and IF, it is true, throughout her life, she has devoted herself to doing all intrinsic or divine good production in every way.**

**1Tim 5:11**

**v11: But keep refusing, declining, rejecting younger widows as unqualified for charity from the Local Church; for you see when it occurs that they have maximum libido, and intense strong sexual desire, which separates them from Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, they keep having a totally irrational, strong emotional desire to marry,**

**Lesson #76      Series # 467      1Tim 5:12**

- I. Application in Human Relationships continued:
- II. Doctrine of Divine Discipline
  - A. There are certain categories of people who are under constant Divine Discipline.



B. Definition:

1. Divine Discipline is the sum total of punitive measures by which God judges and disciplines the believer in time.
  - i. All believers receive throughout their Spiritual Life and life on earth a certain amount of Divine Discipline administered from the Justice of God.
  - ii. Divine Discipline is always the alternative to blessing in the Christian Way of Life.
2. 2 areas of Divine Discipline exist in time:
  - i. For carnality or Sin
  - ii. For reversionism
  - iii. These often mesh at some point and the person in reversionism is most often carnal most of the time and this intensifies them.
  - iv. It NEVER implies loss of salvation no matter how severe the discipline is.
  - v. It is confined to time and there is no Divine Discipline in heaven
  - vi. God keeps some believers alive just to provide Divine Discipline for them.
    - a. This is their only reason to keep some alive and when the Divine Discipline is completed they will be removed to heaven where there is no more sorrow, tears or pain.
3. For carnality:
  - i. It is always temporary and limited and canceled by rebound.
  - ii. When a person sins he moves out of the Plan of God and receives at that point Divine Discipline in order to TELL HIM that he is OUT OF THE PLAN.
  - iii. When rebound occurs there are 3 options for the Divine Discipline which has occurred.
    - a. Divine Discipline is canceled entirely **1Cor 11:30-31**
    - b. Divine Discipline can be diminished
    - c. Divine Discipline can continue at its regular intensity
  - iv. Sooner or later the Divine Discipline is removed from the believer who uses rebound procedures.
4. For reversionism:
  - i. It is extensive Divine Discipline and is more permanent in nature and always terminates in the Sin Unto Death.

C. The purpose of Divine Discipline in time:

1. To correct the believe and bring the believer to the point of reality with regard to his carnality or reversionism
2. It is to produce rebound for carnality and recovery for reversionism
3. The overall purpose of Divine Discipline in time is NOT to punish for sin or reversionism but to WAKE UP the believer to the fact or reality that he is OUTSIDE of the Plan of God and as a member of the Royal Family of God this is unacceptable.
4. The Divine Discipline no matter the intensify is designed to bring the believer back into the Plan of God.

D. The principle of Divine Discipline **Heb 12:5-6**

**Heb 12:5**

**v5: And so You, yourselves have forgotten the principle of doctrine which teaches as sons ( Royal Family of God ), my son, do not regard lightly or make light of the punishment or corrective discipline from the Lord, and do not faint when punished or reproved by Him.**

**Heb 12:6**

**v6: For you see, whom the Lord Loves he disciplines or punishes and he skins alive with a whip every son whom he receives by grace or welcomes home.**

1. This punitive action is for the believer only and Divine Discipline is an extension of the grace blessing of God from the Justice of God motivated by the Love of God.

2. Divine Discipline is an indication of relationship and is for CHILDREN as per **Heb 12:5-6**

**Prov 3:12**

v12: for whom the LORD loves he judges by punitive action, therefore like a father to a son in whom he delights.

- E. The purpose of Divine Discipline:

**Rev 3:19**

v19: Those whom I love, I punish and correct by Divine Discipline; therefore being lukewarm in reversionism, GET HOT, REPENT or change your mind about Bible Doctrine and recover and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God

1. This is warning stage of Divine Discipline.
- F. Divine Discipline never implies loss of salvation **Gal 3:26, 2Tim 2:11-13**
1. We are sons of God through Christ, Jesus and once a child of someone you will always be their child.
  2. Because of current and retroactive positional truth and enduring suffering:
    - i. We will reign with him in eternity
    - ii. If we deny him through rejection of Bible Doctrine then he will deny us our Super-Grace and Surpassing Grace blessings
    - iii. If we are in reversionism he is still faithful and cannot deny himself.
- G. Divine Discipline is always confined to time **Rev 21:4** and no one will ever be disciplined in eternity.
1. The only thing which could be close to Divine Discipline is loss of decoration and reward and of surpassing grace blessings.
  2. These losses do not change the facts that we will have forever a Resurrection Body and no Old Sin Nature and not be saddled with Human Good and not be subject to the Lake of Fire.
- H. Divine Discipline is designed to turn cursing to blessing **1Cor 11:30-31**
1. This lists all 3 categories of Divine Discipline for reversionism.
    - i. Warning
    - ii. Intensive
    - iii. Dying
  2. By judging self through rebound we will not be judged.
  3. Rebound generally cancels Divine Discipline related to carnality
  4. When rebound occurs and suffering continues the purpose of it is blessing and it no longer is cursing and has not punitive connotation **Job 5:17-18**
- I. Divine Discipline or reversionism includes Self Induced Misery Ps 7:14-16

**Ps 7:14-16**

v14: Behold or focus your attention here, he, the reversionist, shall have perpetual intensive agonizing labor pains of warning Divine Discipline, he shall have vanity or arrogance of stages 1-4 of reversionism, making his own misery, because he has become pregnant from reaction related to Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and Sin of all types and frantic search for happiness and operation boomerang frustrations therefore he has given birth to a life of nothingness or deceit or reversionistic evil. (Cosmic Dynasphere involvement and total reversionism)

v15: He (Believer in Cosmic Dynasphere Reversionism) has dug his own grave or pit, and then he explored it through Frantic Search for Happiness or Emotional Revolt of the Soul and the experience of the Sin Unto Death, therefore he has fallen into the pit or ditch of the Divine Discipline which he himself has constructed.

v16: His frustration or evil from Cosmic Dynasphere involvement will return on his own head as Self Induced Misery, His violence oppression of others and that which is obtained by violence or deceit or evil shall descend on the crown of his own head.

1. No believer ever gets away with anything and this is part of the Justice of God and Grace of God motivated by the Love of God.
- J. The principle of triple compound Divine Discipline:
1. Self Induced Misery with Divine Discipline

- i. Everything which happens to you which can be regarded as punitive is not always from God and much even MOST of it is Self Induced Misery.
  - ii. We are the source of our own misery and trouble and many times people blame God for what they have brought on self by their own volition and actions.
2. First there are 3 areas of failure and Divine Discipline for each area:
- i. Mental Attitude Sins
    - a. Arrogance
    - b. Jealousy
    - c. Bitterness
    - d. hatred
    - e. Vindictiveness
    - f. ETC
    - g. These all produce Divine Discipline in themselves
    - h. They inevitably will motivate the individual to produce verbal sins.
    - i. These are simply a reaction to someone whom you are in contact with.
  - ii. Verbal Sins **Matt 7:1, Ps 64:7-8, James 4:11, 5:9**
    - a. When you gossip, malign, judge or disparage someone else in terms of sins which you allege they have committed then by doing so you become subject to their discipline
      - i ) They may have committed these sins or NOT and you simply are a liar
    - b. In both cases when you mention sins of others you have committed a verbal sin for which there is Divine Discipline
    - c. Your verbal sin in its content has mentioned sins which you ascribe to others maybe real or imagined, truth or lie, but this is not the issue and whether truth or lie you are out of line
    - d. Whatever sins you mentioned each carries its own Divine Discipline and all of that Divine Discipline is transferred to YOU.
    - e. If you are mentioning sins which another person has actually committed they are NO LONGER JUDGED FOR THOSE SINS AT THAT POINT.
    - f. That Divine Discipline is transferred from them to you.
    - g. When the sin you mentioned is not true then the other person is blessed and YOU STILL A RECEIVE THE DISCIPLINE FOR THOSE SUPPOSED SINS.
    - h. You cannot ever gossip, malign or judge another person without
      - i ) the discipline being removed from them and transferred to you
      - ii ) they receive blessing
      - iii ) ONE OR THE OTHER.
    - i. Anytime you want to do this YOU get the discipline and They either get alleviation from Divine Discipline or special blessing and thus you have failed in your motivation for maligning this person.
  - iii. When is judging nor judging, define judging, explain judging are all idiotic questions
    - a. When a person has authority over others and must rate their performance as part of his responsibility THIS IS NOT JUDGING.
    - b. Judging or maligning or gossiping ALWAYS MENTIONS SINS, real or imagined and when you have lied you are simply trying to discredit them.
    - c. When you judge a person under your supervision or recommend someone this is EVALUATION and is required for all people in supervisory positions.

- i) This is correct and has to be done and is an estimate of their character, capabilities, stability, or lack thereof, whatever their qualifications, how well they function in the organization.
    - d. Whenever you are required or asked to make a recommendation or character reference YOU MUST BE HONEST and evaluate correctly whether it will be good or bad.
      - i) This must not have personal animosity when rating someone else.
  - iv. Overt Sins
    - a. Whatever sins you attribute to others you are then disciplined for.
    - b. God has a perfect sense of justice **Matt 7:2**
    - c. Again any sins you attribute to others carry their own Divine Discipline and if they actually have done the sin then they are relieved of the discipline and you receive it for them or they are blessed and you receive the discipline for the supposed sin.
    - d. YOU CANNOT AFFORD THIS SINCE YOU ARE ALREADY UNDER DISCIPLINE FOR MENTAL SINS OF JUDGING AND NOW FOR RELATIONSHIP WITH THE CONTENT OF YOUR JUDGING.
      - i) This is the way it is and the people who can least afford more discipline get the most.
  - v. You can always tell a person who is a habitual gossip or maligner or judger for they are always MISERABLE.
    - a. When you get into this rat race of gossip and maligning you will be perpetually miserable and GOD is always just and fair.
- K. There are 3 categories of Divine Discipline is reversionism:
  - 1. Warning Divine Discipline **Rev 3;20**
    - i. The Lord knocks at the door of your life and is warning you that the JUDGE is standing at the door ready to judge **James 5:9**
      - a. This is NOT salvation but preparation for judgment.
    - ii. This warning stage has instant recovery by means of rebound and then persistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
    - iii. In this stage too much Bible Doctrine has NOT been lost from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - 2. Intensive Divine Discipline **Ps 7:14, 38:1-14**
  - 3. Dying Divine Discipline **Rev 3;16**
    - i. This is the Sin Unto Death for persistent reversionism.
- L. Sin Unto Death Divine Discipline:
  - 1. This brings out the fact that Reversionism and Divine Discipline in any stage is simply NOT worth it.
  - 2. Definition:
    - i. The means by which the reversionist is transferred from time to eternity.
    - ii. This is dying by means of maximum punitive measures from God.
    - iii. It is HORRIBLE, painful, miserable and the obvious exception to dying grace.
    - iv. Dying grace is antithetical to the Sin Unto Death and is the means of transfer of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace to eternity.
    - v. This is transfer from life to eternal life under the MOST MISERABLE POSSIBLE OF CONDITIONS.
    - vi. You leave behind a life of total misery and will reach eternity minus Super-Grace blessings and minus surpassing grace blessings and rewards.
  - 3. Documentation: **Ps 118:17-18, 1John 5:16**
    - i. This exists but does not imply loss of salvation.
  - 4. Cause of the Sin Unto Death:
    - i. Prolonged and unchecked reversionism is always the cause

- ii. This is also being under the influence of EVIL
- iii. This combination leads to the Sin Unto Death **Jer 9:13-16, Jer 44:12, Phil 3:18-19, Rev 3:15-16**
- 5. The Sin Unto Death does not mean loss of salvation **1Tim 2:11-13**
- 6. There are only 4 ways to transfer from time to eternity:
  - i. Sin Unto Death not the way to go.
  - ii. Dying Grace for believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God
    - a. This is the greatest blessing in life.
  - iii. Permanent Change of Station under Surpassing Grace as Enoch **Heb 11:5**, Elijah
  - iv. The resurrection of the Rapture Generation.
- 7. The case histories of the Sin Unto Death:
  - i. These show that various types of reversionism ALWAYS lead to the Sin Unto Death.
  - ii. Monetary – Annaiah Saphirah – **Acts 1:10**
  - iii. Phallic – Incestuous Corinthian **1Cor 5**
  - iv. Ritual – Carnal Corinthians **1Cor 11:30-31**
  - v. Mental Attitude – Saul refusing to kill the enemy **1Sam 13:9-14**, His neglect of the word of God, **1Chron 10:13-14**
  - vi. Verbal – Hymenaeus Alexander – **1Tim 1:19-20**
  - vii. Anti Establishment – Hezekiah – **Is 30:1-3, 38**
  - viii. Most of these mentioned were people who were able to reverse the reversionism and recover and get out of the Sin Unto Death.
- 8. Rebound is also a factor in reversionism recovery **1Cor 11:30-31, James 5:20**
- 9. Consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception is essential for recovery **James 4:7-8**

III. These widows who are man crazy are associating with other reversionistic males causing a greater problem.

- A. These women LEARN to be idle and useless showing that at one time they were actually in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace being productive and enjoying a life of blessing and activity.
  - 1. They have now retrogressed from that point into reversionism and associate with other reversionists and thus learn from this association to be idle and useless.
  - 2. They are idle having nothing constructive to do and useless having no capacity for life and do not know how to enjoy all that they have.
  - 3. From idleness a uselessness they then become harmful.
  - 4. NO BELIEVER EVER STANDS STILL IN THE SPIRITUAL LIFE.

**1Tim 5:12**

**v12: constantly having and holding, from reversionism and influence of Evil from the past resulting in extreme libido and intensive desire to marry again, judgment of Divine Discipline for reversionism, because they have declared invalid, rejected by Negative Volition in reversionism having swerved from their first or most important or previous Bible Doctrine resident in their souls.**

**Lesson #77      Series # 467      1Tim 5:13**

- I. Application in Human Relationships continued:
  - A. What it is like to be in Reversionism under the influence of evil and involved in things which are lack of capacity for life, love and happiness with much free time and not know what to do with it.
    - 1. From idleness and uselessness the believer in reversionism becomes very harmful
      - i. No believer ever STANDS STILL in the Spiritual Life he is either moving forward or backward.
      - ii. Here is one moving backward.
    - 2. The people in reversionism under the influence of evil have a life of absolutely no direction.

B. Principle:

1. The demonstrative pronoun is not translated in the idiom but indicates the HOUSES from which and to which these idle persons (widows here) are moving about.
  - i. This indicates association with other reversionistic believers fulfilling LIKES associate with LIKE kind.
  - ii. When this occurs they influence and bolster each other with inbred idleness.
2. The wondering indicated a life without direction purpose or definition.
3. There is no preposition here and the idiom is rendered "From house to house".
4. Notice that it is inevitable that people with a meaningless purposeless life become idle with nothing to do and inevitably become trouble makers.
5. Notice also that there is never enough time in a day for those with a meaningless life for those with great capacity and many interests in life.
  - i. ***As a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ we should have great interests OUTSIDE the area of Bible Doctrine in the general area of life***
  - ii. To have a meaningful life in the Royal Family of God demands Spiritual Maturity and Priority #1 being Bible Doctrine and therefore capacity and enthusiasm for life must come from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - iii. **Spiritual Maturity in time comes to the believer in only one way, consistent persistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception taking in doctrine to a maximum and reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace and therefore fulfilling the PURPOSE OF YOUR LIFE to receive blessing from God in time and therefore glorify God by your life in time.**
6. You will therefore appreciate spiritual and material blessings having capacity for them and eventually you will have dying blessing and all of this will result in glorifying God.
  - i. The Super-Grace believe with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul has capacity for life and blessing and happiness and there is never enough time in a day having more in his life than he can say grace over and his life is fascinating and challenging and a great blessing.
  - ii. When you find you have time hanging on your hands the next thing in this idleness is TROUBLE MAKING.

C. Idleness is a temporary Status Quo from which you go down.

1. The circumstances for every kind of trouble making are always based on idleness and uselessness or HAVING NO ENTHUSIASMS IN LIFE.
2. Idleness becomes a fire support base for Mental Attitude Sins and Verbal Sins and variations in the function of evil.
3. One thing leads to another in these widows idleness leading to verbal sins and this is RETROGRESSION in the Spiritual Life.

D. Doctrine of verbal sins

1. This is a low point leading to very serious things in the Spiritual Life.
  - i. Gossiping, maligning and judging are serious sins and in fact the worst category of sins.
2. Definition:
  - i. Sin is transgression of the law of God.
  - ii. A known sin is a transgression or violation of divine law which we are cognizant of.
  - iii. An unknown sins is also a transgression or violation of divine law which we are cognizant of.
  - iv. In both cases the volition is involved and whether you know it was sin or not volition is always involved.

- v. The difference is cognizance of divine law, Bible Doctrine especially with regard to hamartiology.
  - vi. Whether the divine law is known or not human volition is always involved in transgression of it.
  - vii. All sins combines the Old Sin Nature area of weakness with human volition.
3. Categories of sin
- i. There are 3 categories of sin in the Human Race
    - a. Adam's Original Sin imputed at physical birth to the human being
    - b. Perpetuation of the genetic Old Sin Nature through fertilization of the female ovum and subsequent physical birth causing physical life and spiritual death.
    - c. Personal Sin occurs after birth and before physical death as a result of having an Old Sin Nature.
  - ii. There are 3 categories of Personal Sin:
    - a. Mental
      - i ) Envy
      - ii ) pride
      - iii ) Arrogance
      - iv ) jealousy
      - v ) Vindictiveness
      - vi ) Hatred
      - vii ) Guilt
      - viii ) anger
    - b. Verbal
      - i ) Gossip
      - ii ) Maligning
      - iii ) Judging
      - iv ) Lying
    - c. Overt
      - i ) Adultery
      - ii ) Murder
      - iii ) Theft
      - iv ) Drunkenness
      - v ) ETC.
  - iii. All personal sins originate from the Old Sin Nature involving the human volition.
  - iv. This means verbal sins originate from the Old Sin Nature and are activated by human volition.
  - v. Human volition is involved in ALL SINS.
  - vi. The instrument of verbal sins is the TONGUE but this is not the source which again is the Old Sin Nature. **James 3:6**
4. Out of the list of the 7 worst sins 3 are verbal sins **Prov 6:16-19**
- i. Arrogant Eyes == Pride == Mental**
  - ii. Lying Tongue == Verbal**
  - iii. Hands that shed innocent blood == Murder == Overt**
  - iv. Wicked Plans == conspiracy or revolution == Mental**
  - v. Feet running to evil == Being Influence by Evil == Mental**
  - vi. False Witness == Lying == Verbal**
  - vii. Spreading strife == lying == Verbal**
5. Verbal sins and reversionism:
- i. Verbal sins are always motivated by mental sins which generally are: **Ps 5:8-9**
    - a. Pride
    - b. Jealousy

- c. Bitterness
    - d. Vindictiveness
    - e. Implacability
    - f. Hatred
    - g. Pettiness
  - ii. Judging or slander is a sign of reversionism **James 4:11, 5:9**
  - iii. Verbal reversionism causes the believer to come under heavy Divine Discipline. **James 5:12**
  - iv. Verbal reversionism produces a treacherous and unreliable person **Ps 12**
  - v. Reversionism and being under the influence of evil are characterized by verbal sins.
- 6. Verbal sins produce triple compound Divine Discipline
  - i. Discipline for the Mental Attitude Sins
  - ii. Discipline for the verbal sins which result
  - iii. Any mentioned sins with regard to the victim that Divine Discipline is transferred to you.
- 7. God protects the Super-Grace believer from verbal sins **Job 5:19-21**
  - i. Economic Military and verbal sin protection.
- 8. The congregation and the TONGUE:
  - i. Control of the tongue and avoiding verbal sins is a sign of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace **James 3:2**
  - ii. Verbal sins can destroy a congregation **James 3:5-6**
    - a. One clacking person with a loose tongue can burn down the whole congregation.
  - iii. Since verbal sins can destroy the congregation it is a solemn duty of the Pastor Teacher to warn against them **2Tim 2:14-17**
  - iv. The use of the false or pseudo gift of tongues is also verbal sinning and is EVIL in itself.
  - v. Trouble makers in the congregation are characterized by verbal sins **Ps 52:1-4**
  - vi. Separation from those guilty of verbal sins are commanded **Rom 16:17-18**
- 9. Blessing from avoiding the verbal sins **Ps 34:12-13**
  - i. Lips speaking deceit is Gossip, Maligning or Judging
  - ii. This is what results in triple compound Divine Discipline.
  - iii. Review triple discipline this last lesson.
- E. Every member of the Royal Family of God is protected by DOUBLE PRIVACY:
  - 1. Being a member of the Human Race he is protected under Under Divine Institution #1
    - i. As long as he is not a criminal.
    - ii. He has a right to his own home, his castle, to live his life without interference from any others, to property as a human being under Divine Institution #1
  - 2. Being a member of the Royal Family of God Priesthood he is also entitled to live his life as unto the Lord.
  - 3. No one has a right to intrude or interfere with the privacy of a member of the Royal Family of God:
  - 4. The only exception to this are in cases of authority:
    - i. Husband over wife
    - ii. Parents over children
    - iii. Pastor over congregation where necessary to control violations.
    - iv. It is extremely important for Royal Family of God to learn to MIND THEIR OWN BUSINESS.
    - v. The congregation must avoid being a “Friendly” church checking on persons who attend and requiring disclosure of personal information.
      - a. Completing visitors cards



- b. Telling people you love them
- c. These things are superficialities and NOT AUTHORIZED.
- vi. Therefore Royal Family of God should always mind their own business and fulfill the principle of LIVE and let LIVE.

F. Doctrine of privacy:

1. Definition:
  - i. Privacy is a state of being apart from observation and company of others.
  - ii. It is the innate right of the Human Race to seclusion
  - iii. It is that principle of FREEDOM where by the individual has a right to withdraw from the company of others remaining in seclusion from the knowledge and observation of others.
  - iv. Privacy, property and Life are the basic concepts and components of freedom.
  - v. Pursuit of happiness, business and the lords business also.
  - vi. The Laws of Divine Establishment guarantee the privacy of all in the Human Race so that he can exercise his freedom without coercion
    - a. Exception CRIMINAL.
  - vii. In addition to freedom and establishment every believer has additional privacy being in the royal priesthood to fulfill living life as unto the Lord.
2. The principle of privacy and the royal priesthood **1Pet 2:9**
  - i. Regeneration and insertion into the Royal Family of God from Baptism of God the Holy Spirit unique among dispensations and believers.
  - ii. The royal priesthood must have privacy to fulfill its mission in life in time to fulfill its function to live individually as unto the Lord. **Col 3:17**
3. No believer has a right to intrude into the privacy of another believer. **John 21:21-22**
  - i. Peter was interfering in John's business and the Lord had to PUT him DOWN.
4. Violation of privacy means we are judging others **Rom 14:4, 10**
  - i. We all serve Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and HE alone is responsible to take care of what we do or don't do.
  - ii. We live life as unto the Lord not because some motivated person is trying to bully us.
  - iii. No one should ever come up to you and try to tell you how to live your life.
  - iv. Parents have the right to tell children what to do.
  - v. Husbands have an obligation to TRAIN their wives (ff as impossible as that may be).
  - vi. The pastor has a right to interfere with a person who interrupts the teaching of Bible Doctrine.
    - a. In bible study you sit still not moving concentrating on what is taught or DON'T COME TO CLASS.
    - b. This is a constant process of weeding out idiots who intrude on the privacy or concentration of others.
  - vii. Every member of the Royal Family of God has an Efficiency Rating coming up from the Lord at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ but in addition we constantly receive from the Lord Efficiency Ratings which determine blessing or Divine Discipline.
  - viii. You can only live ONE life your own and you cannot live someone else's life.
    - a. We have all we can say grace over in our own yard.
    - b. It is impossible for you to live someone else's life no matter how much an expert you think you are.
    - c. When a child leaves home and becomes an adult he must make his own mistakes and we as parents MUST bite our tongues and refrain from trying to tell our children what to do!!!!

- d. As adults they make their own mistakes and successes and never must we interfere with them unless they are stupid enough to ASK for our opinions.
  - e. Parents can be bad but GRAND PARENTS are totally a disaster in this area.
  - f. The people expert in living someone else's life are those who are not living their own life and have nothing else to do but live your life.
5. Privacy includes the principle of live and let live **2Thes 3:12**
- i. People living an undisciplined life doing no work, having nothing to do, will become violators of privacy of others.
  - ii. We must all work for our own living and food as part of the Laws of Divine Establishment function.
  - iii. Idleness always leads to trouble making.
6. Reversionists always violate the privacy of others sticking their nose into the business of others **1Tim 5:13**
7. Violators of the privacy of others is comparable to other freedom violations.
- i. When you stick your nose into someone else's business you are violating the very principle by which you live FREEDOM.
8. ***Under Freedom when you violate one part you violate the others as well***
- i. ***Freedom is LIFE, PRIVACY, PROPERTY***
  - ii. ***When you deface property you violate their freedom and privacy***
  - iii. ***When you malign or judge in violating their privacy you made their life public business.***
  - iv. ***When you murder privacy is violated.***
  - v. ***Life is violated by Murder, Tyranny and Slavery.***
  - vi. ***Property is violated by Theft and Vandalism***
  - vii. ***Privacy is violated by Gossip, Maligning, Lying or Judging***
  - viii. ***Intrusion into the privacy of others is compared to MURDER and THEFT in 1Pet 4:15***
  - ix. ***Murders and Thieves are both out of line, criminal, violating the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution #1.***
  - x. ***Gossip, Maligning and judging are put onto the same level as murder and theft because these are the 3 ways in which you destroy freedom of another person.***
- G. The greatest demonstration of your love for the brethren in the Royal Family of God in your congregation and elsewhere is to keep your mouth shut when it comes to associating them with sins, or evil or to take anything private in their life and make it public knowledge by verbal sins.

#### 1Tim 5:13

v13: **And at the same time also they learn by imitation and association with someone of bad company who is , not concentrating on Bible Doctrine, to be idle, useless, not able to mind their own business and fulfill live and let live, having wondered around from house to house with a directionless life, and not only idle but also gossips and maligners motivated by Mental Attitude Sins, being meddlesome, intruding into things which do not concern one, invaders of privacy constantly saying those things which should not be mentioned in gossip, maligning, and judging or being petty with other believers.**

#### Lesson #78

#### Series # 467

#### 1Tim 5:14

- I. Verbal sins epitomized by Gossip is not one sin but involves Mental Attitude sins of all other categories.
  - A. It identifies and recognizes the individual as being in reversionism and also under the influence of evil.
  - B. Of all the sins committed around the Royal Family of God the one which is MOST vicious and greatest cluster of additional sins are VERBAL SINS.
    - 1. Gossip
    - 2. Maligning
    - 3. Judging
    - 4. Assigning sins actual or imagined to others.

- C. The importance in the Christian Way of Life is to keep your mouth shut and avoid at all costs these sins.

## II. Widows continued:

- A. All younger ladies who are widows are not like this characterization of widows.
  - 1. The ones who are need to be under a MAN who is truly a man.
  - 2. They in essence NEED DISCIPLINE and in their life NO ONE DID IT, no one ever straightened them out in several areas.
  - 3. They often need good sound thrashing, scolding and chewing out verbally.
  - 4. It is good to be disciplined even when it was unfair.
  - 5. It is good to mature under discipline and NO ONE CAN EXERCISE AUTHORITY UNTIL HE HAS BEEN UNDER STRICT AUTHORITY.
  - 6. NO ONE EXERCISING INFLUENCE SHOULD BE ALLOWED TO LIVE LONG ENOUGH NOT TO BE DISCIPLINED.
  - 7. NO ONE EXERCISING AUTHORITY CAN DO SO SUCCESSFULLY UNTIL THEY HAVE BEEN ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE AUTHORITY AND STRICT DISCIPLINE.
  - 8. Our young people in this generation and the one coming up are going to present us with an extreme shortage of LEADERS who have grown up under permissiveness which is totally destructive to leadership and proper exercise of authority.
- B. Paul is suggesting Marriage but NOT the lovey dovey situation of marriage but that they get a drill instructor as a husband and get under authority FINALLY.
  - 1. This again is for the girls who have never had the benefit of having a MAN around them and controlling them.
  - 2. Marriage in this case which Paul is suggesting is basic training for their life.
- C. Principles:
  - 1. It is assumed that the younger widows have not married and MAN and certainly not their Right Man since if they had they would not be so messed up having learned from their first husband.
    - i. This passage assumes that the first husband is an ass and a weak sister male
    - ii. If he had lived long enough the woman would have nagged him to death.
    - iii. I never saw a woman gossip where the man she was married to was a REAL MAN.
    - iv. He would cut her off so strongly she would never do it even behind her back.
    - v. A REAL MAN never permits a woman to gossip.
    - vi. If a man cannot handle his wife and she continues to gossip around him then the pastor should throw her out without a qualm.
    - vii. The assumption with regard to this first type of widow is that their marriages were flops and this is one reason why they are in REVERSIONISM.
    - viii. These widows have never come NOSE TO NOSE with a real man.
    - ix. Straightening out a woman who does not include physical violence.
  - 2. These women are commanded to marry for several reasons:
    - i. To avoid the influence of evil in v11-13 and marriage has something to do with it for the woman when she marries a MAN or the RIGHT MAN.
  - 3. It is obvious that they needed to be under the authority of a male who is a real man.
  - 4. This also helps them to recover from reversionism because a reversionist is always in conflict even with his RIGHT pastor and the content of the message always causes resentment to a reversionist since they are always reprimanded by almost anything which is said.
  - 5. Having accepted the authority of her husband who is either her right man or a real man and having accepted the authority of a man who has accepted the authority of being spiritual leadership she will also accept the authority of and teaching of a Pastor Teacher from whose messages she can recover from reversionism.

- i. Marriage is not a solution for anything for the young people who think of it as a panacea.
    - ii. But it can be the solution for a reversionistic widow who is malleable material.
    - iii. At 30 the woman finally arrives with some sense.
  - 6. They will enjoy all the benefits and blessings of Category II love which keeps the woman out of trouble.
    - i. If it is NOT actually Cat II love it will approximate it in the sense of being a legitimate marriage and still keep her out of trouble.
  - 7. Therefore these widows are a rare case where it is beneficial to the physical and spiritual nature of these women to get married.
    - i. This does not apply to every widow or woman.
  - 8. It must be added that this command has exceptions of all kinds:
    - i. In widowhood
    - ii. Those with the gift of Cellabicy
    - iii. Those under the law of supreme sacrifice.
- D. In addition Paul commands them to “BEAR CHILDREN” which is something which is expected to occur with younger widows.
  - 1. As a result of making a 2<sup>nd</sup> marriage a successful marriage and being under a real spiritual man she is going to advance instead of retrogress.
- E. Added to the authority of a real or right man whom you marry these young women are here commanded to NOT remain a reversionist and NOT give anyone the occasion to question their character and Spiritual Life.
  - 1. As a result this woman will enter into the most important love of her life Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  - 2. The real man makes sure that this wife with her 2<sup>nd</sup> husband that she gets straightened out.
  - 3. Sometimes he may have to get tough in such a way that it is a calculated risk that the marriage may disintegrate.
  - 4. But if he sticks by his position that woman will fall in love with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and that will turn around and cause her to fall in love with him.
  - 5. This is how this type of mixed up screw ball wandering around in a daze female often gets straightened out.
  - 6. This is the only way some women reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receive their Super-Grace blessings and there are some women who will bow and kiss the feet of the man they married who brings them to Bible Doctrine and causes them to grow in the Spiritual Life and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - 7. Some girls are mixed up in thinking that their right man is going to leap up and say “RIGHT MAN”.
  - 8. The right man for some girls may be the man that she hates the most in her periphery until she gains capacity for love.
  - 9. Being married does not mean a thing as far as love is concerned and the most often missing thing in marriage is LOVE.
  - 10. It is Category I love Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ which must precede category II love in life for the Royal Family of God.
  - 11. There are men who resent their wives coming to bible study each day but they are PETTY things.
  - 12. This is destruction of the only possible way for the woman to truly love these men.
  - 13. Many men have missed the greatest thing in his life by trying to keep a woman from Bible Doctrine.
- F. The thing which prevents opportunity for Satan to distract these believers is a REAL man who takes control of the spiritual and all types of leadership in the home.

### III. Doctrine of the Devil:

- A. Person of the devil:
1. He is the highest of all angelic creatures and the most brilliant and most attractive of all angelic creatures. Matt 8:28, 9:24, 12:26, Luke 11:8+19
    - i. All angelic creatures are more attractive than human creatures.
  2. The devil is the prehistoric super creature Is 14:12-17, Ez 28:11-19
  3. The devil has 3 falls, Is 14, Ez 28, Rev 12, 20
    - i. Leader of the angelic Revolt
    - ii. Loss of rulership of the earth
    - iii. Cast into the Lake of Fire forever.
  4. The devil has 2 advents:
    - i. First in the garden where he found man in perfect environment and led the woman astray who then led the man astray.
    - ii. Second is in perfect environment at the end of the millennial reign of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the earth where he leads another revolution.
    - iii. These 2 advents are where he leads 2 revolts against God.
  5. The devil is the central antagonist of the Angelic Conflict and is THE ENEMY. Heb 12-2, Gen 6, 1Pet 3:18-22
    - i. All fallen angels are enemies of God
    - ii. All unbelievers are enemies of God.
    - iii. The DEVIL is THE Enemy
  6. The devil has a very strong organization Eph 6:10-12
  7. The devil is a murderer, John 8:44
  8. The devil is the opponent to Bible Doctrine Matt 13:9, 39
  9. the devil is THE enemy of the church the Royal Family of God Rev 2:9, 13, 44
- B. Principle of that the devil is ruler of this world. Luke 4:5-7, John 12:31, 14:30, 16:11, 2Cor 4:4, Eph 2:2.
1. He assumed ruler ship of this world at the fall of Adam and Ishah and will continue to have it till the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
- C. Therefore the devil has a strategy regarding the nations of this world, Rev 12:9, 20:3&8
1. This generally makes him the opponent of Bible Doctrine and Laws of Divine Establishment.
  2. He either tries to duplicate in a pseudo way what God has accomplished or is directly opposed to what God has given man.
- D. Therefore the devil has a strategy regarding unbelievers in the world and it is stated in 2Cor 4:4 and many others and it is to blind the unbeliever to the true principles of the gospel and Bible Doctrine reality 2Pet 2, Luke 8:12, 2Thes 2:7-10, Col 2:8, Rev 17
1. Religion is the devils highest trump card in the Angelic Conflict but NOT his only one.
  2. Every system of evil is part of the strategy in blinding the unbeliever.
  3. The worst thing which ever occurred in this world is RELIGION it is satanic inspired and evil and wrong.
  4. The worst thing to ever happen to any individual is to become involved in religion.
- E. Therefore the devil has a strategy with regard to the believer as well and we are a challenge to Satan in this Church Age.
1. We are the Royal Family of God and ambassadors for Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and he has therefore a 7 part strategy:
  2. First to accuse us 2Cor 2:11
    - i. He keeps a file on each believer which he deems important and spends time in heavenly convocations accusing these specific believers, Job 1:5-11, Zech 3:1-2, Rev 12:9-10, 1John 2:1-2
    - ii. He is the sponsor of reversionism 1Cor 10:19-21, 2Cor 11:3, 13-15.
    - iii. He is trying to frustrate the Will of God under 3 categories:

- a. The mental Will of God by influence of evil in the life of the believer Eph 4;14
      - b. The geographic Will of God 1Thes 2;18
      - c. The Operational Will of God James 4:7-8 also the influence of evil.
    - iv. He tries to neutralize Bible Doctrine application especially in the field of worry and anxiety 1Pet 5:7-9
    - v. He tries to destroy the believers perspective or focus in life so that you get your eyes focused on:
      - a. People, Jer 17:5
      - b. Self, 1Kings 19:10+14
      - c. Things Heb 13;5-6.
    - vi. He tries to get the believer involved in some form of evil especially improvement of the devils world and this believer under the influence of evil becomes:
      - a. Humanistic occupied with temporal solutions in life
      - b. Altruistic advocating systems to improve man's environment
      - c. Socialistic becoming involved in social action becoming a bleeding heart liberal.
    - vii. He tries to accomplish the inculcation of FEAR regarding death Heb 2;14-15
      - a. This only works with reversionists and believers under the influence of evil.
- F. Religion is part of the devils strategy and has been created by the devil to counterfeit the system of God.
1. Christianity is NOT a religion but a relationship with God through Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
    - i. This is always a GRACE relationship and were the believer enters the Royal Family of God through the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  2. Religion is by contrast man seeking to gain approbation of God through his own plans, works, systems or deeds.
    - i. Many people have no talent but are full of good deeds
  3. Religion as a principle represents the incredible evil genius of Satan it is viewed here through its many counterfeits.
  4. The counterfeits of religion include:
    - i. Gospel 2Cor 4:3-4
    - ii. Ministers called "clergy" 2Cor 11:13-15
      - a. These are often the sweetest wimpiest jackasses are included and often wear clerical garb and speak in soft dulcet tones about nothing.
      - b. They know nothing, think nothing and say nothing and do it beautifully.
    - iii. Doctrines 2Tim 4:1
    - iv. Communion 2Cor 10:19-21
    - v. Spirituality Gal 3;2-23
    - vi. Righteousness Matt 19:16-28
    - vii. Modus Vivendi Matt 23:13-36
      - a. (widows get into this situation where they are robbed and conned by religious types)
      - b. All con artists get people to believe that their ideas are the only truth and they have a great area of hidden arrogance.
      - c. They never appear to be arrogant and always appear sincere and right and in fact are never right but always wrong.
    - viii. Power and dynamics as with Holy Rollers Tongues involvement are Satan's own royal regiment.
      - a. These believers who have ever claimed to speak in tongues 2Thes 2:8-10

- ix. Gods 2Thes 2:3-4
- G. False teachers are part of the devils strategy and most clergy are part of this:
  1. Always have a phony and hypocritical facade
    - i. they make you feel you are the most important person in the world and make you feel wanted and stimulate your EGO to the point of you being ARROGANT thinking and saying that this one is the “NICEST” man ever. Matt 7:15, Rom 16:18
  2. They use human public relation systems and legalistic flirtations of condemning one thing saying they don’t believe certain behaviors are spiritual to court believers to their systems.
    - i. This way they always court the legalistic and create a mutual admiration society.
  3. They appeal to human pride and arrogance 2Cor 10:12, and make a sucker out of you every time.
    - i. They are after your money or your involvement in some program and don’t care about you as a person but just if you can build up their clergy image.
  4. They promote idolatry as part of the devils communion table Hab 2:18-19
  5. They promote legalism and Self Righteousness 1tim 1:7-8
  6. They continue throughout the Church Age 1John 4:1

**1Tim 5:14**

**v14: Therefore, after careful deliberation it is MY, Paul's, command decision that the younger widows, not qualified for Local Church charity and with their own problems of libido, marry to get under the authority of a strong husband, have children, administer or manage their households as mistress of the Home, and give no or not one opportunity to the enemy, Satan himself, to abuse or reproach GRACE.**

**Lesson #79 Series # 467 1Tim 5:15**

- I. In our life about 1/3 to 2/3 of the people of the world have come under communism and islam.
  - A. When the United States of America is not HELPING nations to move under communism that nation has done something incredibly stupid.
    1. Every European nation which has come under communist domination has begun with some stupid national movement such as Gun registration and confiscation then invasion.
    2. Without citizens being armed there is no means of self protection from criminals within or enemies without.
  - B. We have been in the situation of self destruction and loss of freedom since before the early 70’s and we WILL lose every freedom eventually.
    1. We in the 70’s were not free to go out and get killed on the freeway and we are to remain alive to be a government statistic and if we don’t want to use seat belts we have not options in that matter.
    2. If you want to own a special weapon we have not option and eventually we will not be able to move from Point A to B.
    3. If we want to endanger our own lives we should have the option to do so it is OUR RIGHT.
    4. Statistics about how many people die in accidents on the highway are irrelevant and if you don’t know how to drive and get yourself killed then you are dead and it was your time.
    5. Because these NUTS want to die then the living must live under TYRANNY and if this nut wants to die it is HIS BUSINESS.
    6. His dying is between him and the Lord even if he is an unbeliever and the Lord will take him when it is HIS time and not before and the same for anyone else in his periphery during his accidental death.
    7. We don’t need any controls on our atmosphere and many cities want federal tax money for their socialism experiments and today for their “sanctuary” status for illegals.

- C. We still have a right to OWN and possess firearms in the United States of America in 2018 BUT it is constantly under attack and even in PA today there is a bill introduces with regard to “assault” weapons and their ban.
1. The 2<sup>nd</sup> amendment to the constitution does not give us a right to own firearms
  2. This is an inherent right of the individual to protect his life and property.
  3. Our culture is NOT communistic or socialistic but is Anglo Saxon and whether you are red or white or yellow or black we all have the same cultural background.
  4. As long as is within memory EVERYONE has had a right to own and use weapons in defense of his life, liberty and property and privacy.
  5. The Shire Mut was made up of free Saxons always armed and never was there Sword, Spear, Bow registration and MANY people Died by this mechanism.
  6. Americans have become blind SHEEP or as we say sometimes SHEEPLE, So stupid about life and reality they cannot find their own way out of a box.
- D. When you add to this Bible Doctrine you see clearly that the 2<sup>nd</sup> amendment was written to show that it was the inherent right of EVERY individual lawful citizen to own and possess and use ANY KIND of weapon he wants to defend his life, freedom, privacy and property.
1. The local constabulary has NEVER been adequate to prevent crime and this is why we have crime statistics since they usually get to the scene to investigate crime AFTER the FACT.
  2. There is no such thing where there is a police force LARGE enough and well enough trained to be everywhere they are needed at once.
  3. Police are human and not omnipresent and ubiquitous and most crime is committed when he is NOT there and if he is there the first thing to die is the officer who is so restricted by idiotic rules that they must wait to engage a criminal until they are attacked first.
- E. Politicians DESTROY freedom and the MILITARY regains and preserves and protects freedom along with the POLICE OFFICER.
1. Since the 1970’s it has been more difficult to be a police officer than ever before and today they stand around and watch crime, looting and riots in our cities without any interference.
- F. OWNING and possessing and USING firearms is the inherent right of EVERY lawful citizen in t his country and the government has NO RIGHT TO IN ANY WAY TO RESTRICT THIS RIGHT.
1. In daily cases if it were not for the ownership and use of firearms it would not be possible to protect life and freedom.
  2. The lawful possession and use of firearms in this country even to today is the greatest deterrent to invasion and revolution and were it not for this fact VIOLENCE would be a daily occurrence NOT an intermittent thing.
- II. It is imperative to know how to apply Bible Doctrine and just as you are taught Bible Doctrine you must be taught how to apply Bible Doctrine.
- A. 1<sup>st</sup> Timothy teaches us how to apply Bible Doctrine since Timothy although very smart and dedicated did not know how to apply doctrine.
- III. The doctrine of GRACE:
- A. Definition:
1. Grace is all that God is free to do for man on the basis of the work of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross.
    - i. God is a DOER while man is a failure in doing things and we have people in congress since long before the 70’s who do things but this is social action and bleeding heart liberalism.
    - ii. God is perfect and to be a great doer you must be perfect.
    - iii. No human is a good doer and most of our doing ends up being Human Good.
    - iv. GRACE is what it is all about in God doing for man.



2. Grace is God's freedom and consistency to express his love for mankind without compromising or jeopardizing his essence.
  - i. This is why sometimes God expresses love by Blessing and sometimes by Divine Discipline.
3. No one can truly give or rightly give apart from freedom and God gives out of TOTAL freedom without compromise to his character all because of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross.
  - i. We must understand the GRACE aspect of the cross because it means that God is free to:
    - a. bless you
    - b. Give eternal life
    - c. Provide for Time and Eternity
  - ii. Because his character is NOT compromised by giving to any of us who are sinners and undeserving in every sense.
    - a. Yet God gives to us the greatest and finest of everything.
    - b. To be given this without compromise to the character of God means he must find in his great genius a way to do it without any compromise.
  - iii. To give to the undeserving is most often a compromise to righteousness but God is perfect Absolute Righteousness and he cannot change it and cannot compromise it.
  - iv. God cannot love us by getting down to our level as this is blasphemous.
  - v. God gives us the greatest of everything without compromise to his character and can only do this because of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross.
  - vi. Until you make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone you cannot even approach the Grace of God.
4. Consequently grace is Plan of God on behalf of man beginning at the cross
5. Grace is both the Plan and policy of God regarding mankind.
6. Grace therefore is the plan, policy, function and mechanics of the divine Modus Operandi.
  - i. God is the doer and we are beneficiaries of his doing and this is why we are alive and every blessing and capacity and everything wonderful we have is based on his doing.
  - ii. The Tongues movement are trying to impress God with their vocal cords when in the Human Race there are only a handful of people who can impress anyone with their vocal cords.
  - iii. Legalists are also NON talented people who try to impress God.
  - iv. There is only ONE worker in the grace Plan of God and it is composed of the trinity ONLY.
  - v. Each member of the trinity is always doing something and they do ALL the work.
  - vi. Since God is perfect the doing is perfect and we benefit and this is grace.
  - vii. God is doing for us as we study this information giving us enough air and circulation of blood and metabolizing of material for energy so that we can function focus and concentrate on what is taught.
  - viii. This allows us to retain the ability to learn Bible Doctrine and then be blessed in a magnificent way in time totally apart from Evil and the Cosmic Dynasphere..
7. Under grace God does all the work and providing while man does all the receiving and benefiting totally apart from any merit on his part.

B. Concept of Grace:

1. Grace depends on the Essence of God and Character of God and therefore always depends on who and what God is and is what God can do for man and be totally consistent with his own essence.

- i. Grace is God's relationship with the believer and also his salvation.
    - ii. Grace is all God can do for man from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Eternity totally apart from Man's merit, ability, talent or plans.
  2. Grace is the genius of God and doctrine is the manifestation of that genius.
  3. The issue is God doing vs Man doing and man doing is legalism which is man's intrusion into the Plan of God by his ability, works, talents or schemes.
    - i. The believer must be able to sort out the difference between GRACE and Legalism
    - ii. The believer often clings to something he thinks will impress God because people are impressed by these things.
    - iii. Then these people begin to transfer HUMAN praise to God as if God has done things which are accomplished by their efforts and then think they are spiritual when in fact they are retrogressing into reversionism.
  4. The believer has to be aware of clinging to some talent or ability which he can use to impress God.
    - i. Legalists for example believe often that for giving 10% of their measly income to the church they have received blessing in this life and this is a satanic lie.
    - ii. No one is ever blessed for giving anything to anyone.
    - iii. Giving is a specific function of the royal priesthood and TITHING does not mean a thing and in fact was originally TAXATION.
  5. The only blessing we have from God comes on the basis of grace and nothing we do will bring blessing not even coming to church once a week.
  6. You must begin to recognize the difference between GRACE and legalism and the only way this is possible is through consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine
    - i. Grace and legalism cannot and will not coexist and they are mutually exclusive and antagonistic
    - ii. A little legalism leavens the entire lump.
    - iii. Grace and Grace Orientation comes through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- C. Grace and the New Contract for the Church Age.
1. The Church Age is under a special contract and this is a special dispensation which has interrupted the age of Israel.
    - i. The glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ by resurrection ascension and session the strategic victory of the Angelic Conflict interrupted the Jewish age so that the Royal Family of God could be formed.
    - ii. The Royal Family of God is formed by the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and the new covenant or contract for the Church Age is related to Bible Doctrine in the field of sanctification.
  2. Grace found a way to take man created inferior to angelic creatures and make him superior and this is accomplished in the 3 phases of sanctification.
    - i. Positional Sanctification makes us through the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit entering us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ higher than angels.
      - a. We in union with Christ share everything Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ has.
    - ii. This is NOT religion and Religion is satanic and evil and vicious and the worst thing ever to happen to mankind is religion.
    - iii. Most of the evil in Human History can be traced back to religion.
    - iv. Much of the confusion we have in our government is related to religion and social gospel and social action.
  3. Christianity is a RELATIONSHIP with God and this first part of the Christian Way of Life provides everything for royalty and the fact that ever member of the Royal Family of

God is positionally higher than angels and this is GRACE and we did not in any way earn this.

- i. The Royal Family of God have signs of this royalty in the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit, sealing of God the Holy Spirit etc.
4. The second stage of sanctification is Experiential sanctification:
  - i. Living or Logistical Grace contains 2 categories of GRACE.
    - a. God can express his love motivation through his justice providing grace in 2 ways thanks to propitiation:
      - i ) Blessing
      - ii ) Cursing or Divine Discipline.
    - b. This all depends on whether you are influence by Bible Doctrine or Evil.
    - c. SIN IS NOT THE ISSUE SINCE ALL SIN WAS JUDGED ON THE CROSS IN Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
    - d. If you are MINUS Bible Doctrine you are under the influence of evil in Reversionism, Legalism or some sort of Apostasy.
    - e. If you are under the influence of Bible Doctrine you will move ahead into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace and beyond.
  - ii. This is God keeping us alive in time in order to provide blessing and in order to be glorified.
    - a. When God can bless any believer apart from functions in the Cosmic Dynasphere then HE is glorified.
    - b. He provides all we need to survive after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God whether we are advancing in the Spiritual Life toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or retrogressing into reversionism.
    - c. He provides all we need to be kept alive and all the assets we need for spiritual growth.
    - d. He provides our Food, Shelter, Clothing, Transportation, Livelihood
    - e. He provides the preserved Bible Doctrine in Scripture, the Pastor Teacher, the Local Church classroom, the concentration, the poise and good manners and self discipline etc.
    - f. For the believer under Negative Volition in apostasy and moving toward reversionism he provides Charlie Grace which is many types of Divine Discipline in time.
5. The third stage of sanctification is reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace.
  - i. Here we receive Super-Grace blessings in 5 categories:
    - a. Spiritual blessings which include
      - i ) Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
      - ii ) Maximum capacity for category I love.
      - iii ) Sharing the Happiness of God
      - iv ) Maximum application of Bible Doctrine
      - v ) Bible Doctrine in the Soul used for every situation in life
      - vi ) Maximum capacity for life, love, happiness and blessing.
    - b. Temporal Blessings
      - i ) Wealth
      - ii ) Success
      - iii ) Promotion
      - iv ) Prosperity in many categories
      - v ) Leadership ability
    - c. Blessing by association
    - d. Historical Impact

- e. Dying Grace blessing
  - i ) This is the greatest blessing of our life where we are transferred to eternity and our great rewards.
  - ii ) This is transfer of the Super-Grace believer from time to eternity with GREAT blessing.
  - iii ) This is the experience of physical Death under special grace blessings moving the believer from time to eternity.
  - iv ) This links the Super-Grace blessings of time with the surpassing grace blessings of eternity.
- ii. The only way to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace and beyond is through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- 6. The 4<sup>th</sup> stage of sanctification is Ultimate Sanctification:
  - i. Is having a Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature, Human Good and evil and without sin for Eternity.
- D. The Modus Vivendi of Grace:
  - 1. Grace is the means of Growth 2Pet 3:18
  - 2. Grace is the means of Stability Heb 13:9, 1Pet 5:12, Heb 12:28
  - 3. Grace is the basis for production of Divine Good 1Cor 15:10, 2cor 6:1
  - 4. Failure to use grace means Divine Discipline Gal 5:4, Heb 12:15
    - i. Warning
    - ii. Intensive
    - iii. Dying
  - 5. Grace is related to Blessing in suffering 2Cor 12:7-10
- E. Axioms of Grace:
  - 1. God is perfect therefore his plan is perfect
  - 2. A perfect plan can only originate and function from the source of a perfect person God.
  - 3. If man can do anything meritorious in the Plan of God it is no longer perfect.
    - i. Man being imperfect cannot contribute to a perfect plan.
    - ii. No imperfect creature can do anything in a perfect plan and is excluded by his imperfect namely sinfulness.
  - 4. A plan is no stronger than its weakest link and there is no weak link in the Plan of God since God is perfect.
  - 5. Grace excludes all human merit, ability, Human Good, legalism, Self Righteousness and arrogance.
  - 6. Legalism is the enemy of grace and there is no place for legalism or Human Good in the Plan of God.
  - 7. All legalism and Human Good is associated with the greatest sin originating in Satan himself Arrogance or pride and there is no place for this in the Plan of God.
  - 8. There are 4 areas in which Arrogance rejects grace.
    - i. The Pride of the believer who rejects Eternal Security.
      - a. Any person who rejects eternal security must be the MOST arrogant believer alive.
      - b. He assumes in arrogance that his sins are greater than the Grace of God or Plan of God and this is the ultimate arrogance.
    - ii. The pride of the believer who succumbs to pressure or adversity and always thinks his suffering and adversities are greater than the Plan of God.
      - a. He goes through life whining and complaining about every little thing in life.
      - b. This is arrogance and any person who constantly whines is in reversionism.

- iii. The Pride of Reversionism who assumes that his forms of reversionism are greater than grace blessings from God.
  - a. He assumes that his emotions and ecstatic experiences and functions of legalism are more important than Bible Doctrine.
- iv. The Pride of Pseudo Spirituality where the believer thinks his system of spirituality is greater than the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
  - a. He in arrogance becomes a holy roller or an ascetic or becomes a taboo fanatic or gets into a point system of spirituality.

IV. Christian Double Agents

- A. All Christians who reject or neglect Bible Doctrine move from spiritual advance without momentum into reversionism.
  - 1. All reversionistic believers are under the influence of Evil which is the Plan and Policy of Satan for man in time.
  - 2. In reversionism under the policy of Satan these believers become double agents and in turn serve Satan.

V. The division of Responsibility.

- A. We must realize that Timothy and the widows discussed in this passage were FAILURES.
  - 1. We never hear much about Titus since he was a very dynamic success as a believer.
  - 2. We hear about the failures because we learn from them what NOT to do and how to apply Bible Doctrine.
  - 3. For the last 20 years of his life he finally grew up and became a man.
- B. We see in v16 potential failures coming up in 16.
- C. There are 3 legitimate sources of charity:
  - 1. Not socialism or welfare state functions
  - 2. The Local Church
  - 3. The government under the system of the special taxes.
  - 4. Family
- D. There will always be believers in need who have no children or other relatives to care for them and they will be the responsibility of the Local Church.
  - 1. If a widow has relatives they should assist financially and the Local Church should not have that burden.
  - 2.

**1Tim 5:15**

**v15: For you see, certain reversionistic believers under the influence of evil the policy of Satan, have already turned away from or avoid Bible Doctrine becoming double agents following after Satan.**

**v16: If any believers, male or female, have and hold relatives who are widows dependent on him, and it is true they do, let him, aid, or assist financially them; and do not permit the Local Church be financially burdened, in order that it may help financially those who are really widows for the remainder of her life.**

**Lesson #80**

**Series # 467**

**1Tim 5:17**

I. AUTHORITY

- A. This is the one thing in life which allows a maximum number of people to have happiness and blessing and pursue their interests without interfering with others who pursue their interests which is the key to everything in life.
  - 1. When man was created by God authority was the great issue and he created in man's soul a system of self induced authority in his Volition / Free Will.
  - 2. Also in the soul of man was created a mentality so that Authority would be meaningful as he superimposed it on HIMSELF in life.
  - 3. Under perfect environment when all was provided by God from spiritual blessing in bible class taught by God the Son Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ to the best of food and with the woman the best sex and social life ever to exist in the Human Race.
  - 4. All these things depend on the principle of authority.

- B. The soul is a system of authority and the mentality of the soul gives Man the wisdom to use the authority of his own soul and recognize all the authority around you.
1. Even when you are under perfect environment it cannot be enjoyed and it cannot be appreciated APART FROM AUTHORITY.
  2. Authority is the key to everything in life and it comes in many sizes and shapes but the basic form of authority it self discipline.
  3. This is the system we use which gives us concentration on the subject and good manners and poise and thoughtfulness of others which allows us to function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception as ordained of God for the Local Church.
  4. This is the basic system of Worship for the believer, it is basically self discipline related to Bible Doctrine.
- C. The people who get the most out of life and have the greatest blessing in life are those who have self discipline.
1. This is seen in the failures in our education system when playing was placed before studying or preparation for classes.
  2. Self discipline is in fact the key to having the most fun in life and the people who enjoy life the most are those with the greatest self discipline so that Play periods are strictly PLAY PERIODS.
  3. Never are work and play mixed up and this takes self discipline and recognition of authority.
  4. A person has the most fun with a Job they do when they exercise strong self discipline and actually DO THEIR JOB AS UNTO THE LORD.
  5. Life will be hard on people without self discipline since they miss the key which is constantly thrown at us from Bible Doctrine that being AUTHORITY.
  6. Those who have the most fun at parties are the same one's who work hardest during work time.
  7. Those who enjoy life the most and have time for enthusiasms are the ones who know how to shift gears and concentrate on necessities of life which demand greater self discipline.
- D. Fundamentalism has always tried to destroy self discipline and has always operated under a false doctrinal principle that God will take care of you.
1. This principle does not apply to your job or other things when it is distorted.
  2. NOT If you don't concentrate on what you are doing and cut off your hand or you jump from the 13<sup>th</sup> floor to get down faster.
- E. A person without self discipline is also one who does not recognize any else's discipline.
1. A person without self discipline does not recognize his own authority of volition and soul and does not recognize any other authority as well.
  2. This person is very self centered, selfish, thoughtless, always making issue of self and never thinking about anyone else and always making issue of self.
  3. This person ignores all the principles of authority in life.
    - i. This is why women fail in marriage not being able to recognize the authority of their husband in marriage.
    - ii. The primary issue for the female in marriage is whether or not she will be able to OBEY the authority of the monster she is marrying for the rest of her life.
    - iii. If not she will be totally miserable in her life.
  4. The man who does not like his boss and does not recognize his authority is the one who never has any fun in life and complains totally about his life.
- F. This is the reason fundamentalist believers go in for the Tongues movement since this throws off self discipline totally.
1. Somewhere in life this has to HALT and it is a shame that God is the one who has to stop this trend by the use of extremely strong Divine Discipline.
  2. This is in effect God using his authority in love but it still hurts terribly.

3. This is what occurs for most fundamentalist believers as they live a life of terrible misery and never figure out why.
  4. NO BELIEVER EVER GROWS UP UNTIL HE SITS UNDER A SYSTEM OF DISCIPLINE UNDER THE GRACE APPARATUS FOR PERCEPTION DAILY AND CONSISTENTLY.
  5. The discipline learned by function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception can very often be transferred to other aspects of life for expansion of enjoyment in life.
  6. The key is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul but you will never have enough Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul unless you take it in but no one has enough self discipline without the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
- G. Life is a system of authority and the first authority you encounter is when you use your authority contrary to the principles of life.
1. You are warned NOT TO TOUCH a hot stove because it is HOT and when you decide to do what you damned well please and touch it and get burned and cry for momma to make it stop hurting she should make you hurt on your gluteus maximus to emphasize the principle of authority.
  2. If Momma burns your but and bandages your burned finger then you learn from this that LIFE is more fun when you follow the rules whether you agree with them or NOT.
  3. If you are blessed in your early life you will be put into a school where the teachers are so tough that you are forced to focus your attention and concentration on the subjects.
  4. If you are able to go home and complain to Momma about the teachers being mean then momma either tries to get the teacher removed or moves you to another school you will suffer for your whole lifetime.
  5. YOU will suffer for your life because the discipline was far more important than the academics in the school.
  6. The only way to learn and learn quickly is to recognize the authority of the one teaching you and to learn you MUST follow what the teachers authority dictates.
  7. You have to recognize the authority BEFORE you can learn.
  8. Many people turn to Bible Doctrine because there are problems which they cannot handle and although the answer could be given quickly by another person it is the taking in Bible Doctrine consistently which will allow us to solve that one problem and all the others which occur in our lifetime.
  9. Police represent the principle of authority and he is OFFICER not cop whether Good or Bad as an officer or person.
- H. The Boss on the job is authority and whatever he says with regard to policy in the company we simply MUST do without questioning it.
1. One of the most vicious evil things which has occurred in military planning is that when some senior officer plans something great some other officer who disagrees with his plan leaks the information to the news media who publishes it and criticize it and a SMART senior officer has his system disrupted and he has to reverse his position and his greatness is ruined.
  2. This when it occurs is a junior officer rejecting authority but also jeopardizing the security of this nation.
  3. No large nation today can survive without several 'undercover' agencies and when these get too much publicity it is a BAD thing.
    - i. The average person does not want to do what these agencies are required to do for our security.
  4. There are many things which we delegate in life and when there is a breakdown of authority it actually destroys much more than the organizations involved.
  5. Any thing in life has blessing and benefit arising from them but this is based on the system of discipline behind them.

- I. There is no area of authority MORE important than in the spiritual realm and this is clearly defined in our passage v17.
1. This respect for and concentration under our right Pastor Teacher is the basic authority of the Spiritual Life.
  2. None of us has made any spiritual growth apart from this system.
  3. The Pastor Teacher is authority and communicates doctrine.
  4. If you know the sins of a pastor it should never keep you from listening to him and growing in the Spiritual Life.
  5. His sins are never the issue in spiritual growth or any other part of life.
  6. It is not SIN which destroys the ministry of any pastor it is stupidity and laziness.
  7. Doctrine is the issue in any Local Church and the Pastor Teacher has the spiritual gift and the authority and should communicate Bible Doctrine.
  8. The only solution is that we must get our eyes on Bible Doctrine and learn it and continue to grow in the Spiritual Life.

- J. There is no member of the Human Race who is perfect aside from Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
1. The Pastor Teacher teaching us is a sinner and he is TEACHING US DOCTRINE.
  2. The best teachers in any field is the one who is the meanest and toughest in that field.
  3. Everything we learn in our entire life we learned from a SINNER.
  4. You never get your eyes on the Pastor Teacher ONLY on the Bible Doctrine he is teaching.
  5. Nice discrete people have never taught us anything but are only part of the background in life.

- K. There is in any Local Church ONE final authority and he may be nice or may be obnoxious
1. If he is a nice sweet person he is full of hypocrisy and puts on a facade trying to make himself impressive and con people into thinking he is a spiritual giant but in so doing these things has failed in his focus on Bible Doctrine.

II. The Pastor Teacher Rulers of a Local Church:

- A. The Pastor Teacher must be honorable in his ruling of the Local Church.
1. You cannot ever grow in the Spiritual Life unless you are in a Local Church where there is ONLY ONE Pastor Teacher who declares the policy and this comes from the Bible Doctrine he communicates.
  2. The Spiritual Gift of the Pastor Teacher is what enables us to grow up in our Spiritual Life.
  3. Memorizing or quoting scripture is great for exercising self discipline but has NO spiritual value at all.

- B. Scripture MUST be transferred to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of your soul and there is only one way for it to occur that being through the teaching of your right Pastor Teacher.

1. He can only do it by exercising his self discipline in studying and teaching.
2. Therefore a congregation of sinners is being taught by a sinner as Pastor Teacher.
3. The Pastor Teacher does not get upset with the congregation learning Bible Doctrine when he knows they are sinners.
4. It is therefore idiotic for anyone in any congregation to get upset about the Pastor Teacher being a sinner,
5. The Pastor Teacher has the spiritual gift and authority and the self discipline to study and then prepare and teach us.
6. The believer must learn and apply Bible Doctrine and never get a "pastor teacher image" in the soul to hold a pastor up to.
7. We are all sinners and God made provision for us to learn and the Pastor Teacher to teach in order that we as the congregation may learn.

- C. The Pastor Teacher is therefore worthy of double honor:

1. Double Honor is not understood by anyone not even the majority of Pastor Teachers



2. It refers to the 2 'R's
  3. Remuneration to liberate their time to do their job.
    - i. This is the salary for the Pastor Teacher and his income MUST come from congregational giving.
    - ii. When a group wants to form a church the first thing they want to do is go buy land and build a church.
    - iii. This is wrong.
    - iv. The first job is to accumulate funds and call a Pastor Teacher and let him lead to the building of a church.
    - v. The pastor must not be put in a position where he has to starve and work outside his spiritual gift and has no time to study to teach doctrine.
    - vi. This is the first responsibility of a congregation to its pastor and the primary purpose of the worship function of the believer called "giving".
  4. Respect is the authority principle directed toward the Pastor Teacher.
    - i. The Pastor Teacher has the highest and purest authority in the world today and respect for the Pastor Teacher and his authority is related to Positive Volition toward his teaching of Bible Doctrine.
    - ii. What any believer thinks of the Pastor Teacher personally is inconsequential but what God thinks of him is of paramount consequence.
    - iii. We never have to worry about the sins or failures of the Pastor Teacher as in the same manner as each of us God will take care of that issue.
    - iv. The Positive Volition of the believer toward Bible Doctrine will result in respect for the Pastor Teacher and also the policy of the Pastor Teacher and his teaching.
    - v. The Pastor Teacher receives double blessing when he is functioning properly and also double Divine Discipline when he is out of line.
- D. The pastor who is worthy of double honor.
1. Sin and personality are not involved.
  2. The only true issue is his dedication to STUDYING and TEACHING Bible Doctrine.
  3. You cannot grow in grace under Bible Doctrine if you are hung up on the personality of the Pastor Teacher.
  4. The honor of the Pastor Teacher is from his HARD WORK in studying and then teaching Bible Doctrine.
- E. Principles:
1. The 2 basic functions of the Pastor Teacher are mentioned here in this verse:
    - i. Ruling honorably as exercising of his authority
    - ii. Studying and teaching which is the exercise of his spiritual gift.
  2. Both the gift and authority were sovereignly given by the Grace of God.
  3. Therefore the entire life of the Pastor Teacher is based on grace gifts from God and grace provision for his daily life.
  4. The Pastor Teacher is the maximum product of grace in the Church Age.
  5. To whom much is given MUCH is expected thus we have double honor, double blessing and double Divine Discipline.

**1Tim 5:17**

**v17: Those Pastor Teacher Guardians who have ruled or governed well with the result that they keep governing honorably by consistent studying and teaching Bible Doctrine, must be considered worthy of double honor, respect and remuneration, especially, above all, those who constantly work to exhaustion studying in the sphere of Bible Doctrine from the pages of the scripture and teaching it into your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul;**

**Lesson #81      Series # 467      1Tim 5:18**

- I. Freedom through military victory: D Day 6 June 1975??
  - A. Politicians DESTROY Freedom and the Military returns and preserves our freedoms.

1. We have had since after World War II the worst foreign policy ever conceived and it could be classified as blackmail.
  2. We have been blackmailed by all communist powers and today by islam.
- B. Because of this the military eventually will have to step in and correct these errors.
- C. Paul J Wirtefur Stf Sgt US Army, G Company 80<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division; CMH and Battlefield commission.
- D. Patrick L Kessler PFC, US Army, K Company, KIA 3 days later before hearing of his award of the CMH.

II. Authority:

- A. The Secret to capacity for life
1. When these people have great blessing they are looking for more.
  2. When they are the objects of generosity they are not grateful especially for that from God or even other people.

III. Double Honor:

- A. Principles:
1. We have biblical documentation for the part of the honor for the Pastor Teacher called Remuneration.
  2. Double honor of v17 is Respect and Remuneration.
    - i. Apparently Timothy needed to know this as the congregation had no respect for him and was not paying him and he was being starved out by them.
    - ii. This was added to his other weaknesses and this is insult added to injury.
- B. The Old Testament Scripture had the same system of Honor for the teachers of Bible Doctrine.
1. Paul here quotes the Old Testament Scripture and also a part of the New Testament Scripture which has already been written putting the 2 on a par with each other.
    - i. This satisfies the both the Dispensations of Israel and the Church Age and confirms the fact that the New and Old Testament Scriptures form the sacred canon of Scripture.
    - ii. There is however NO PLACE for the Apocrypha, Pseudapygrapha ETC other non canonical books.
  2. Paul quoting and using a passage he had already quoted in another part of the New Testament Scripture infers that Paul was AWARE he was writing what was to become the New Testament Scripture.
- C. This first quote compares the Pastor Teacher to an OX but in reality the word here translated OX is actually an Aggressive Hard Working Plodding BULL.
1. The owner of the bull remunerates the bull by not muzzling him while he is threshing grain so that he could eat grain while he worked if he was hungry.
  2. Threshing was accomplished by bulls either by treading out the grain or being attached to a threshing wain.
  3. VERY FEW creatures can work hard and EAT and this is the reason this passage is quoted here.
  4. When a person works they are not eating generally, and they are given a LUNCH HOUR of about 15 min or more.
  5. A Pastor Teacher is working and feeding himself at the same time, As he studies Bible Doctrine he is learning Bible Doctrine and he is feeding himself doctrine while working for our benefit.
  6. The bull is one of the few creatures of the ancient world who could and would be allowed to eat and work at the same time in order to give him the energy to keep going.
  7. This is the principle of remuneration and in the church the congregation releases the time of the Pastor Teacher so that he can study and then teach and as a result he feeds self while he studies.
- D. In the ancient world management setup standards and then paid on the basis of the policy being fulfilled.

E. What this passage teaches:

1. From its surface analysis the principle of FAIR remuneration and it is quoted here as documentation of the necessity of proper remuneration of the Pastor Teacher of the Local Church.
2. However the principle applies to all facets of life.
  - i. In contrast to the total depravity of man under the concept of having an Old Sin Nature and imputation of Adam's Original Sin from birth and personal sin thereafter, The dignity of humanity and poise of mankind is related to productive capacity and ability.
  - ii. This is whether it is professional or skilled ability.
  - iii. The whole Human Race is sinful born with an Old Sin Nature but there is a legitimate dignity of the Human Race related to the Laws of Divine Establishment.
3. Man must work for a living since the fall of Adam Gen 3
4. Management must apply this principle in dealing with labor.
5. ALL People must apply this principle in paying bills to any profession or trade where knowledge or skill is required.
  - i. You not only pay for any repairs made but for the fact that those who are working for you have sacrificed in order to learn a trade or skill or profession.
  - ii. We lose the point when we complain about BILLS where skill is required and we have NO RIGHT to this complaining according to this passage.
6. This verse is talking about remuneration in life and when someone has a skill you need then YOU PAY FOR IT and should and pay more than for a non skilled ability.
  - i. Socialism has destroyed this principle but we are ONLY interested in what Bible Doctrine says not an evil apostate government.
  - ii. When you find a person who complains about his bills he is a WIMP and no one has any right to run down anyone who does work for you and is skilled in some area.
  - iii. You may be overcharged from time to time but this is simply the Old Sin Nature getting into the act.
  - iv. When a man learns a skill he has a right to charge for it any thing he want to charge, and when you need that skill YOU WILL PAY FOR IT.
7. This means paying your bills to any professional or skilled laborer where years have been spent in acquiring the special knowledge needed to perform the needed correction.
  - i. YOU PAY for good professional abilities.
8. In effect this bill should pay for knowledge education skill honor and integrity of the professional and this then balances out.
9. This means that the federal government should Pay WELL its honorable professions such as those in the military.
  - i. Unfortunately they are always cutting down on the military in order to give money and support to the bums who are the scum of our society and keep them alive instead of letting them starve to death.
  - ii. This is SOCIALISM.
  - iii. God graciously gives a nation an ENEMA occasionally designed to reinvigorate the race called ECONOMIC DEPRESSION.
  - iv. When a government interferes with this process postponing it's enema it destroys it people and this results in serious problems.
  - v. This is why the DEPRESSION GENERATION in the United States was the LAST GREAT VIGOROUS POWERFUL GENERATION, great in business and military function and has provided the freedoms we still have.
  - vi. The last time we had a policy of victory and anyone who could bring us to victory was the combination of the military and industry in World War II.

- vii. The industry and military of that time and the people in those areas were VIGOROUS and a GREAT People.
  - viii. These people were those who remained after the PURGE of the great depression and they simply being alive took great vigor and ability.
  - ix. God says that the purpose of a depression is to bring out the vigor of a race or nation and he even tested ABRAHAM with depression.
  - x. Abraham did not have a government to throw check to him to support him and he found himself faced with a famine in the land and came through it and it immediately invigorated the race.
  - xi. What is often called BAD by government is actually GOOD and vice versa.
  - xii. The government does not remunerate its HONORABLE people but remunerates the scum and bums of society and they don't even use their own money they are using OURS.
  - xiii. This is occurring today BEYOND comprehension with socialistic and welfare and education support for ILLEGAL ALIENS in this country.
  - xiv. This is MISUSE of our tax monies.
10. This means that local government should pay well its professional employees.
- i. This includes the Police and Fire Fighters in the local communities.
  - ii. These service professions are honorable and should be well remunerated.
  - iii. This is NOT a call for public education and ALL education should be PRIVATE.
  - iv. Public Education is a destructive EVIL thing and many teachers especially today if they were in a private education system would be better paid and better qualified and all the imbeciles from the communist saturated institutions could be eliminated.
  - v. We need higher education levels in all schools but it should be on a private basis.
  - vi. When you get teachers in public schools who are paid by the government it destroys the profession because of cancer infiltrating the profession in the form of politics.
  - vii. Once politics comes into the teaching profession you destroy it.
  - viii. This is clearly seen by policies which restrict what is taught by teachers and today it is STILL Common Core curricula in our schools.
  - ix. Public grants to universities is evil and out of line.
  - x. If you take away all tax monies to higher education institutions we can then return to real American education.
  - xi. The aggressive good institutions will make it in education and the rest will close down.
  - xii. A person does not need a degree to pump gasoline or dig ditches and our people have the idea that everyone needs to have a college degree to live.
  - xiii. Education is not always good for everyone and educated people are just as miserable as uneducated people.
  - xiv. MOST people have been educated WAY beyond their intelligence.
11. This means the individual should pay well any professional or skilled laborer who have acquired both technical knowledge and skill in an area and are entitled to good remuneration.
- i. Abuses of labor do not change the principle of remuneration.
  - ii. Labor union abuses does not change this principle.
  - iii. Just because there is apostasy in the Local Church does not cancel the function of the Local Church.
  - iv. Just because 90% of clergy today are jerks does not mean God has canceled using Pastor Teachers to teach Bible Doctrine.

#### IV. Principle of Reprimand: v19

- A. First there is no such thing as plurality of elders in any Local Church

1. This concept in the New Testament Scripture is referring to plurality of Elders in a LOCAL AREA not the individual Local Church.
- B. This is a practical application with regard to the Pastor Teacher who is doing something wrong.
1. The Pastor Teacher has his authority directly delegated by God and is therefore responsible directly to God and any reprimand must be handled very carefully in order that the discipline NOT return directly to YOU.
  2. The reprimand must be handled in a way that will not bring Divine Discipline to the congregation nor the individual.
  3. There are so many possibilities and reasons for not getting a reprimand through properly that if it is not going through then the ones initiating it will receive the Divine Discipline.
- C. Since the Pastor Teacher is responsible directly to God the GOD will discipline him.
1. Reprimand or censorship should only exist where someone in the congregation has been wronged, cheated, victimized by gossip or maligning.
  2. You may be out to get a Pastor Teacher for some reason but you must remember if you are not on absolutely perfect ground everything you say about him could fall back on you or on a whole congregation.
  3. The congregation or a portion of it may approach the administration of the Local Church or an individual administrator and the response of these administrators are never to acknowledge or entertain an accusation against the Pastor Teacher which comes from ONE (1) person in the congregation.
    - i. This principle also applies to LAW
- D. Principles:
1. There is always someone in a congregation who is dissatisfied with the Pastor Teacher.
    - i. They are at times antagonistic toward the Pastor Teacher.
    - ii. If the Pastor Teacher is doing a good job in teaching Bible Doctrine there will always be antagonism
    - iii. If he is doing a very bad job of teaching Bible Doctrine there is legitimate antagonism.
    - iv. Either he is doing a good job and it steps on your toes OR he is doing a very bad job and he is such a DOPE even YOU can tell he has no business in the pulpit.
  2. These antagonisms should never be permitted by the congregation as a means of rejecting the authority of the Pastor Teacher.
    - i. At Some time or another someone in a congregation may be mad at the Pastor Teacher but this is of no consequence and you can be mad and come back to bible study and still learn Bible Doctrine.
    - ii. The point is that you should never allow any antagonism whether real or imagined to prevent you from returning to get Bible Doctrine day after day.
    - iii. This is objectivity in the Royal Family of God.
  3. Again the principle is the Pastor Teacher is responsible go God the only one who knows all the facts in a case and NOT ONLY disciplines him in a just manner but in fact he gets double Divine Discipline.
    - i. Whenever a Pastor Teacher as a sinner is out of line he get double Divine Discipline.
    - ii. If the Pastor Teacher is getting Divine Discipline an you get yourself involved in maligning him when you mention his failure to someone else you suddenly get his discipline and he receives blessing instead.
  4. In fact from God the Pastor Teacher receives double discipline.
  5. Those who seek to malign a Pastor Teacher receive intensified Divine Discipline for their efforts.
  6. Therefore in the normal course of action in any congregation, maligning, judging, accusing any Pastor Teacher is prohibited by the word.
  7. The exception is stated in the rest of the verse.

8. Remember that the pastor should receive double honor respect and remuneration and v17 covers remuneration and v18a covers respect by this prohibition to accuse.
  9. A Liar an implacable or jealous person may malign a Pastor Teacher to someone else
    - i. This other person may be impressed by the maligner and believe his lie
    - ii. This other person has no discernment nor common sense to detect the vindictiveness or jealousy of the maligner.
    - iii. Therefore this other person believes what is said from an arrogant, jealous, bitter, vindictive Evil Gossip.
  10. This causes someone in the congregation to LOSE respect for the Pastor Teacher thus depriving the Pastor Teacher of ½ of his double honor.
  11. Furthermore this is the half of the double honor which produces spiritual growth in the Royal Family of God and YOU.
  12. Therefore maligning or gossip about the Pastor Teacher of any Local Church is forbidden in very strong terms.
    - i. No taper in any place in the world who receives this lesson and is dissatisfied with any Pastor Teacher in any community who is NOT teaching Bible Doctrine should NEVER say anything against that Pastor Teacher but simply LEAVE that Local Church quietly.
    - ii. We must never try to correct any Pastor Teacher and just keep the MOUTH SHUT and leave quietly.
- E. The Exception: How to cut a pastors throat without getting blood on ourselves.
1. Pastors are sinners and failures and have Old Sin Natures and we may not know their sins but they do sin and we ONLY HAVE TO KNOW THEIR MESSAGE.
  2. The exception is based on the biblical laws of evidence **Deut 19:15**
  3. ONE person saying something about some violation of another person is **HEARSAY** and this is NOT admissible evidence.
  4. This is one person's word against another and the witness may have jealousy, bitterness or vindictiveness against the other person.
  5. One person saying something adverse about someone else no matter who it is about should never be considered saying truth.
  6. This is again HEARSAY and to be considered there must be 2 or 3 witnesses minimal.
  7. The testimony of 1 person is never conclusive for if it were conclusive then anyone you disliked you could get rid of by testifying against them.
  8. The WITNESS could be Wrong, Evil, Filled with Mental Attitude Sins, Reversionistic, Seeking Vengeance, feeding Blind Arrogance, Catering to Legalism and say something against another and it would be accepted immediately.
  9. When This testimony of ONE against another is accepted it is a sign of extreme stupidity and of PARALLEL Mental Attitude Sins on the part of the hearer.
  10. With one witness you believe what you want to believe and facts are not ever considered and TRUTH is NOT the issue and truth has to always be the issue and truth must be established.
  11. The reception of gossip as well as giving gossip makes each individual susceptible to triple compound Divine Discipline.
    - i. Many believers are punished by God simply for receiving and believing gossip.
  12. The reprimand or discipline of the Pastor Teacher demands a formal courts martial where proper evidence is introduced by 2 or 3 witnesses.
  13. A vindictive person running around with a mouth full of evil must be rejected.

#### 1Tim 5:18

v18: For the Old Testament Scripture eternal absolutely or dogmatically says (Deut 25:4, 1Cor 9:9), "You shall not muzzle an aggressive hard working BULL while he is threshing," also, (Deut 24:15, Luke 10:7) "The workman labor is worthy, having fulfilled the standards of the job, of his wages."

1Tim 5:19

v19: Against The High Quality Pastor Teacher Guardian of a Local Church, with authority directly from God and Responsible directly TO GOD, the board of Deacons should NEVER acknowledge or accept any accusation by ONE person except on the basis of testimony of two or three witnesses.

**Lesson #82      Series # 467      1Tim 5:20**

- I. The bible was written over the course of Several Millennium but it is very current and what was written in the past must be interpreted based on the Status Quo of the past.
  - A. There are some things in life which never change and some things are the same today as when the New Testament Scripture was written.
    1. Current trends in history can be understood based on the light of the word of God.
    2. There is a great deal to say in the bible about Laws of Divine Establishment, government, tyranny, demigods, power, Abuse of authority and power and all these things are clearly described as direct application from Bible Doctrine and Laws of Divine Establishment.
- II. Discipline of the congregation:
  - A. The believer is disciplined directly from the lord but when a congregation comes together and there is someone is disruptive of the function of the local church then that person is disciplined within the framework of the local church.
    1. This is a biblical principle.
    2. The local church is the classroom for spiritual growth and apart from it there can be no spiritual growth.
    3. As the classroom there is a Pastor Teacher Guarding who provides the information of Bible Doctrine on which spiritual growth is accomplished.
    4. The Pastor Teacher has certain prerogatives for discipline which are to protect the congregation from disruption by disreputable weird and apostate individuals.
    5. It is also the objective of the Pastor Teacher to ensure that there is enough discipline to allow those who are functioning under positive volition to NOT be hindered by those who would distract all.
  - B. The congregation will always have those who persist in sin and are disruptive of the function of the local church classroom.
    1. The Bible Doctrine presented to the congregation is the basis for spiritual growth which is the basis for receiving blessing provided by God from **Eternity Past**.
    2. God knew in **Eternity Past** that Satan would be ruler of this world and it is the objective of God to provide blessing for the positive believer apart from the satanic system.
    3. Satan's policy is EVIL and totally apart from evil or any system under evil the believer under positive volition toward Bible Doctrine can receive every type of temporal and spiritual blessing imaginable.
  - C. There are certain areas in which everyone sins all the time but this passage is not concerning normal sins which all of us commit.
    1. Mental
    2. Verbal
    3. Overt
  - D. This sin is the invasion of the privacy of other members of the Royal Family of God.
    1. The principle here is "LIVE AND LET LIVE" and it is based on the fact that everyone has a RIGHT to his privacy.
    2. All members of the Royal Family of God have a right to privacy and no local church should require any personal information from any believer.
    3. As a believer in this Church Age we have a double right to privacy.
      - i. Privacy as being a member of the Human Race under the Laws of Divine Establishment.
      - ii. Privacy as being a member of the Royal Family of God under our royal priesthood.

4. Privacy is essential to learning Bible Doctrine effectively.
  5. The local church should not be a lonely hearts club but as a “friendly” church should give the believer privacy.
  6. Therefore this sin considered in v20 is something which violates the privacy of another believer.
- E. People should not come to the local church to get acquainted with people in the congregation.
1. The Pastor Teacher should not personally try nor set up another person to try to acquaint individual believers with other members of the congregation.
  2. If you want to get acquainted with others in the congregation you should do it on your own.
  3. A person must be selective about whom he is acquainted with and NO ONE wants to get acquainted with everyone unless they are a screwball.
  4. The purpose of the local church is to allow the believer to get better acquainted with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- F. The people being referred to are those in the congregation guilty of being maligners, judgmental, gossips, those involved with Mental Attitude Sins and who express them through the tongue.
1. These are sins committed by the congregation in rejection of the authority of the Pastor Teacher and his teaching of Bible Doctrine.
  2. Those in the congregation who continually sin in this manner.
- G. Mental sins which reject the authority of the Pastor Teacher:
1. Blind Arrogance
  2. Jealousy
  3. vindictiveness
  4. Implacability
  5. Bitterness
  6. hatred
  7. Antagonism
- H. Verbal sins which reject the authority of the Pastor Teacher:
1. Judging
  2. Maligning
  3. Gossip
  4. Accusing
- I. Since the double honor of the Pastor Teacher includes respect it is his responsibility to use his authority to maintain the privacy of the Royal Family of God in his congregation.
1. The Pastor Teacher will occasionally have to function in a very distasteful way of disciplining and excommunicating believers who fall into this category.
  2. This is a person who maligns or gossips habitually and attacks the Pastor Teacher causing others to revolt against the authority of the Pastor Teacher in the local church.
  3. The Pastor Teacher has the authority to exercise discipline on those who intrude on the privacy of someone else.
  4. This DOES NOT include parents who are correcting their children.
  5. Children do not have a right to privacy and should be thoroughly supervised in the assembly of the local church.
- J. Timothy is a coward, yellow and backs down to everyone and everything and is totally mixed up about everything in the local church and does not even understand what brotherly love is and allows everyone to walk all over him and bully him and thinks this is being great spiritually.
1. He as the Pastor Teacher in Ephesus is now COMMANDED to get on the ball and start correcting these things in the congregation.
  2. Timothy MUST now begin a counter attack and he is on the floor and a mouse and must now become a roaring lion.
  3. Every Pastor Teacher in every local church must be AGGRESSIVE in:
    - i. Study of Bible Doctrine



- ii. Teaching of Bible Doctrine
  - iii. Counter Attack of any type of bullying or gossiping or maligning in the local church and it must be all cut off and the congregation MUST be protected by the Pastor Teacher from these things.
  - iv. In the discipline of those who seek to neutralize his authority by intruding on the privacy of others.
4. This type of reprimand is an example of what you must do whenever your authority is challenged.
- i. In this case you do not take the person aside and discipline them in private but you REVERSE the situation they have caused and discipline them in public.
  - ii. Some people think it is not very nice to reprimand someone in front of other people but this is a false bleeding heart concept and the bible clearly states HERE in v20 that when your authority is challenged you MUST discipline or reprimand the individual in front of everyone present.
  - iii. Being Sweet and nice is great when everyone understands the principles of privacy and authority but when this is not the case SWEETNESS is WEAKNESS to the jackass who challenges the authority of a leader.
  - iv. The authority of the Pastor Teacher is DIRECTLY from God and is a pure authority apart from the Cosmic Dynasphere and it is to be respected and to have it so respected sometimes you have to get tough with people.
- K. This is just like the communists and moslems and the only thing they understand is FORCE greater than that which they can perpetrate and they do not understand or respect sitting around a conference table and exchanging IDEAS.
- 1. This is why the United States of America is today a 2<sup>nd</sup> or 3<sup>rd</sup> rate power in the world IF THAT.
    - i. We were the wealthiest power and everyone has been trying and succeeding in taking our wealth and extracting it and using it for themselves and today we are the MOST indebted power in the world.
    - ii. While everyone in the world is tough realistic and aggressive we live in wonderland and believing every day the we will have peace in our time if we surrender or cow tow to the communists or moslems.
      - a. Thank GOD for Donald Trump and his STRENGTH and interdiction with North Korea and Syria and has put Russia and China on Notice.
  - 2. We can wake up as a nation in 1 of 2 ways:
    - i. The catastrophe of the 4 cycles of Divine Discipline which appears to be the case in the United States of America today which has obviously still not come fully awake.
    - ii. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of all believers.
    - iii. These are the only thing which will bring us back to reality.
    - iv. The constitution of our nation has been set aside and manipulated and interpreted to the point where many freedoms have been set aside and every day more and more are lost.
    - v. Freedom of the press no longer functions properly and since the 70 have had no moral principles but are used only to form and present ideas which push us to surrender to socialism, communism and islam.
  - 3. You must meet challenges to authority the same way you meet challenges to national sovereignty:
    - i. You must go after a country which challenges your nation in this way and tear them apart and this is the only way to keep freedom.
  - 4. The Pastor Teacher must discipline these types before the congregation in order that he might not lose his authority over the congregation.

- i. No Pastor Teacher can fulfill the principle of studying and teaching if he loses the double honor he is to have from his congregation.
  - ii. This is the first phase of loss of double honor in loss of respect.
  - iii. No Pastor Teacher can teach without authority and no Pastor Teacher can devote his time to study without remuneration.
  - iv. To study the Pastor Teacher MUST BE PAID and supported and the Pastor Teacher must have Authority and respect from the congregation in order to teach them.
  - v. The recalcitrant not only undermines the Pastor Teacher but others as well.
  - vi. These people will subvert many people and being sweet and nice to them WILL NEVER WORK.
  - vii. This is the reason people must at times be reprimanded in front of others even though some will be lost and some never understand.
5. This is the LONELY thing about any type of leadership if you do your job with honor and integrity on the basis of correct policy YOU will NEVER be understood.
- i. No executive should ever run around and explain his policy to labor but simply lay down the policy and not explain things to anyone and EXPECT it to be followed.
  - ii. Whether some people understand or not does not matter.
  - iii. You cannot be a good leader or executive in any area by constantly explaining and the people must either trust your judgment or NOT and if NOT they should move on and find another position under which they can function.
6. These people must be reprimanded in front of the whole congregation so that others will bring themselves into line with proper function and regain respect for the Pastor Teacher.

L. Principles:

1. This is a now full explanation of the double honor of v17
2. Double honor for the Pastor Teacher is respect and remuneration by and from the congregation in order to teach them Bible Doctrine.
  - i. He must have respect because Bible Doctrine is controversial and cuts into the believer's soul like a knife.
    - a. Doctrine challenges and tears us down and rebuilds us it shows us what we are and removes all illusions of grandeur and is a challenge to any arrogance we possess.
    - b. Arrogance is natural in the Human Race but ABNORMAL as far as the Royal Family of God is concerned.
    - c. It is essential therefore for the Pastor Teacher to have respect since many times the believer will NOT Like what is taught.
  - ii. Remuneration is essential to release the time of the Pastor Teacher to study and teach Bible Doctrine.
3. The Pastor Teacher must have respect to effectively communicate Bible Doctrine to the congregation.
  - i. When you give an OBJECTIVE listen to a Pastor Teacher and cannot appreciate his teaching the simply GO FIND ONE YOU CAN quietly without fuss.
4. Any attack on the Pastor Teachers authority on the part of the congregation MUST be met with emphatic vigorous aggressive public reprimand
5. Timothy had lost control of his congregation therefore could not teach them the wonderful doctrines he actually knew.
6. Every revolution or conspiracy in the congregation MUST be vigorously suppressed if the Pastor Teacher is continue in his ministry with the congregation.
7. No taper nor member of the congregation should ever be guilty of this wherever he goes to another church.

- i. When you go to another church in another place and you know the Bible Doctrine is different from what you have learned then you simply DON'T CONTINUE TO GO THERE.
  - ii. Whether you are right or wrong or he is right or wrong YOU have no right to overthrow his authority or right to try to degrade him by correcting his doctrine.
  - iii. You have NO RIGHT to challenge any Pastor Teacher even when you are ABSOLUTELY RIGHT.
  - iv. When you stir things up for another Pastor Teacher to that extent you will have Divine Discipline in your life directly from GOD.
  - v. This is a truly miserable believer who gets in the way of the Divine Discipline coming to an erroneous Pastor Teacher. Matt 7:1-2 Triple Compound Discipline
  - vi. Your job is not to go into another local church and try to correct the Pastor Teacher there or get him thrown out.
  - vii. You should never run down or detract from the authority of the Pastor Teacher in another church to make self appear better.
8. It is true that many Pastor Teachers are ineffective in their teaching but this does not give anyone the right to malign nor revolt but to simply leave quietly without stirring up any fuss or detracting from his authority.
  9. God must discipline such as Pastor Teacher and we MUST leave this to God.
    - i. God does the job better and it is blasphemous to think we can do it better than God.
    - ii. Do not bring Divine Discipline onto self by starting a conspiracy or revolution or starting a committee to discipline the Pastor Teacher.
  10. This means that the matter of double honor has been settled at v20 and this must exist for effective leadership in any local church.

### III. Objectivity of Leadership

- A. Paul is using all his authority as apostle to command Timothy to a course of action.
  1. Paul is pulling rank on Timothy and it is not Timothy his friend but TIMOTHY YOU JERK.
- B. This command is made in 3 categories:
  1. Before God
  2. Before Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
  3. Before Elect Angels.
- C. God the Holy Spirit is not mentioned here because God the Holy Spirit is working in the background in the Church Age with the sole objective of glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  1. He is to form and shape up and empower the Royal Family of God and he must stay in the background and NOT be mentioned.
  2. This is why only 2 members of the trinity in the bible.
  3. It is a warning to all believers who try to glorify God the Holy Spirit and have the audacity and blasphemy to offer prayers to God the Holy Spirit.
  4. You never pray to God the Holy Spirit but in the power from God the Holy Spirit
  5. You never glorify God the Holy Spirit and he does not need it in any way.
  6. It is degrading for any believer holy roller to ever mention God the Holy Spirit as it is totally blasphemous.
  7. It is imperative we remember God the Holy Spirit remains in the background and glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ John 7:39
- D. Paul is commanding that the entire ministry of Timothy throughout his lifetime be a ministry of alertness and protection and preservation of Bible Doctrine and its principles.
  1. In every generation ALL Pastor Teachers are to do this.
  2. There must be alertness to protect and preserve Bible Doctrine principles by all Pastor Teachers in the life of their ministry.
- E. Principles:

1. No one can have the extensive authority possessed by the Pastor Teacher of the local church and be guilty of prejudice.
2. Authority demands maximum objectivity in dealing with personnel and authority is abused when pride intrudes
  - i. Pride is prejudice.
  - ii. The more authority you have the less prejudice must accompany that authority.
  - iii. This is true in every realm of life but especially for the Pastor Teacher.
3. The Pastor Teacher cannot allow his personal feelings, likes or dislikes to influence him in his function in his ministry.
4. The Pastor Teacher cannot ever judge cases nor administer discipline nor handle false Bible Doctrine when he has the attitude of “My friends, right or wrong”.
  - i. He must also be free from Bible Doctrine prejudice we call legalism to be objective in helping the congregation.
5. His soul criteria for everything ONLY includes the principles of Bible Doctrine he has studied and taught and which have become the GRACE policy of the local church.
  - i. This is OBJECTIVITY in spiritual leadership.

F. Principle:

1. There is no function of the ministry of the Pastor Teacher which calls for partiality, bias nor prejudice.
  - i. Bible Doctrine is the life of the Pastor Teacher and the only partiality is found in what the word of God says.
2. While a minister may be closer to some in the congregation than with others he must exercise his authority with out bias or prejudice toward all members of the congregation.
3. Personal relationships or friendships must never be a factors in policy or command decisions or function of authority and the LACK of this is why some people will never go very far in any job or profession nor ever have any position of leadership in life.
4. The greater the authority in leadership the greater the freedom from bias, partiality and prejudice there must be.
5. No decision judgment nor policy is ever to be made on the basis of friends, loved ones or relatives.
  - i. You cannot ever be a leader and constantly play one person off against another.
  - ii. As a leader YOU MUST MAKE YOUR OWN DECISIONS.
  - iii. A leader must not be influenced by anyone and must be able to listen to reason objections to policy to be instituted and to people whose judgment is respected and must make all decisions himself.
6. The Pastor Teacher must use his authority make his decisions and establish his policies on the basis of Bible Doctrine and the principles of the word of God.
7. Personal friendships have nothing to do with policy nor administration of the local church.
8. People should never underrate the influence of Bible Doctrine when the Pastor Teacher makes a decision which is unpopular.
  - i. The POWER of Bible Doctrine should never be underrated.

**1Tim 5:20**

**v20: Those in the congregation who continually persist in sin, rejecting the authority of and respect for the Pastor Teacher, be rebuking, reprimanding, disciplining them before or in the presence of all the congregation who have been undermined or subverted away from the authority of the Pastor Teacher by these revolvers, in order that the rest of the congregation may have respect.**

**1Tim 5:21**

**v21: I Solemnly warn or charge you before The God the Father, the author of the Plan of God and source of all grace, and before Christ Jesus and before the elect angels, that you to remain alert, guard, protect and preserve these principles leadership from Bible Doctrine, apart from or without prejudice, habitually doing nothing by a spirit of partiality.**

- I. Commands for Application of Bible Doctrine:
  - A. The Pastor Teacher is often conned into thinking other people are nice, spiritual, qualified as members in the Royal Family of God in the area of the ministries of Pastor Teacher or evangelist.
    1. Men who are ordained into the ministry must be faithful to the principle of study and teach Bible Doctrine.
    2. We must realize sooner or later no matter what our Status Quo in life is that SINCERITY on the part of someone does not mean that they will be a good:
      - i. Employee
      - ii. Friend (often they will be the worst)
      - iii. Husband
      - iv. Wife
      - v. Boyfriend
      - vi. Girlfriend
      - vii. ANYTHING
    3. Sincerity saturates our government totally and we have never had so many fields of tyranny and absolute power in areas totally without oversight and more and more tyranny is being developed on a day by day basis.
      - i. In addition people have very poor judgment in everything
  - B. Timothy must do the action of this verse in NOT hurriedly ordaining men but must do it after proper and CAREFUL deliberation.
    1. Partiality tends to ordain men for the pastorate who are unqualified.
      - i. Fortunately being ordained does not mean they are going to make it in the ministry.
  - C. Principles:
    1. This is the first sign of instability in the leadership of a Pastor Teacher when on the basis of partiality, emotional appeal, smoke screen of sincerity, he feels compelled to ordain someone.
      - i. This is partiality and on this basis he is too hasty.
    2. Stability of leadership demands that all personnel administration in the local church be accomplished from good judgment or prejudice or partiality.
    3. Timothy had been over impressed with some of the young wimp men in the Ephesian congregation he having a strong trend toward asceticism and has been ordaining those who are just like he is.
      - i. They are wimpy, weak, ascetic types just like Timothy.
    4. The first area of his being attacked for being unstable is in his personnel selection, in this case ordination, but it can go to any facet of the local church.
      - i. Employees
        - a. This is a great field where stability or lack of it can be demonstrated.
      - ii. It is a discredit to a Pastor Teacher when he is forced to fire anyone who has been fired for ANY job in the local church
      - iii. This demonstrates that he has made a mistake in the first place being influenced by their personality or some other factor instead of their qualifications.
      - iv. There are many areas where personnel selection is important and we must realize that no one is perfect not either in leadership or in personnel under that leadership.
      - v. Everyone is going to be fooled at some time just make sure it is not in the area of selecting a WIFE or HUSBAND.
        - a. You cannot easily fire them.
        - b. With regard to Wife and Husband selection once the selection is made by 2 people the principles of Right Man / Right Woman do not apply and the ONLY consideration is what are you going to do with the material you have.

- vi. The Pastor Teacher must be in a position to make personnel decisions and these should be confirmed by the board of deacons and the congregation should be able to veto a selection.
      - a. The Pastor Teacher has to take responsibility for these things.
- D. The next prohibition is a sign of instability by being erroneously influenced and being led instead of leading.
  - 1. Everything we learn we learn from sinners.
  - 2. Timothy is unstable as a leader being easily influenced by others.
  - 3. He has his own sins and being easily influenced by others participates in their sins.
  - 4. No one in leadership can be influenced by anything but Bible Doctrine and grace policies found in Bible Doctrine.
  - 5. To be influenced by others is a sign of weakness and by the sins of others and to participate in them is a sign of MAXIMUM instability.
- E. The 3<sup>rd</sup> prohibition is related to leadership instability as well.
  - 1. There is no such thing as the Pastor Teacher or anyone else REFRAINING from SIN.
  - 2. We all have an Old Sin Nature and carry it to the grave and this means we will sin as long as we live.
  - 3. The Pastor Teacher must be pure in the area of freedom from Mental Attitude Sins.
  - 4. Timothy gets petty, vindictive, jealous, vain, ETC and was not free from Mental Attitude Sins.
  - 5. Because they are inadequate, inadequate people always are guilty of Mental Attitude Sins
  - 6. Mental Attitude Sins compensate for their inadequacy and why they are Jealous, Petty, Vindictive, Blindly Arrogant.
  - 7. No one can exercise authority and be filled with Mental Attitude Sins.
  - 8. Mental Attitude Sins produce instability in leadership.
- F. Summary:
  - 1. This verse is in the form of 3 prohibitions
  - 2. There are 3 weaknesses in Timothy which form a triad of leadership instability.
  - 3. Each of these sentences relates to a different problem of instability in leadership and timothy's life.
  - 4. Timothy had strong partiality resulting in rashness with regard to hasty ordination of unqualified persons.
  - 5. Weak Timothy was attracted to weak persons who impressed him as being qualified for the ministry.
  - 6. Timothy was creating a clergy of weak pastors, unstable legalists an order of ascetic wimps.
  - 7. Though obviously avoiding overt sins he was petty, small vindictive, prone to Mental Attitude Sins which he shared with his weak wimpy clique.
  - 8. In his Clique he accepted the attitudes and evaluations of his friends resulting in more pettiness and more ascetic legalism.
  - 9. Timothy needed to become alert with regard to the fact of his inherent weakness and ultimate failure.
  - 10. His Mental Attitude Sins were destroying his leadership in the local church.
  - 11. He needed to act as his own service and guard and secure his own soul because of his vulnerability to Mental Attitude Sins.
  - 12. Timothy was like a person with a sword hanging over his head, walking on the edge of a volcano and nursing a viper in his bosom.

## II. Prescriptions (NOT FOR ALL BELIEVERS).

- A. This is a balance in the Christian Way of Life between Prohibition and Alcoholics but between these 2.
  - 1. Alcohol is a beverage and medicine and not just Daemon Rum.
  - 2. Some people should never touch a drop of alcohol.

3. This is not an encouragement to Stop being a reformed alcoholic.
  4. Timothy had all sorts of problems of health and paramount was Diarrhea from drinking poor water constantly.
  5. This does not apply to alcoholics nor teetotalers.
- B. Timothy had been a teetotaler and abstaining totally for his whole life from alcoholic beverages.
1. Timothy who had been abstaining from alcohol and drinking ONLY water is now prohibited water.
  2. Timothy was a semi invalid to the extent that he suffered a frequent case of nerves and digestive dysfunctions.
  3. Timothy was an almost neurotic person and needs something to relax him.

### III. Biblical Doctrine of Drinking

- A. We all have different backgrounds with regard to drinking alcohol.
- B. Importance of Objectivity for this subject:
1. Many people do not grow up where there is a lot of drinking with wine served at meals etc.
    - i. Some legalists think alcohol is the devils own blood or urine and if you drink even one drop you cannot be saved.
    - ii. This passage flat out says that drinking alcohol is not sinful and in fact good in certain circumstances and drinking will not putting you in hell.
  2. We are interested in what the bible says about drinking alcohol.
  3. Those who have had personal problems or are related to those who have had personal problems with regard to drinking, have difficulty in approaching this subject OBJECTIVELY.
    - i. Those reared in the atmosphere of christian legalism will be shocked by what the bible actually teaches.
  4. Those who look for an excuse to get off the wagon of abstinence will think they have smelled a cork and can now drink as much as they want.
  5. No subject has more prejudice and less reason than the subject of drinking alcohol.
  6. This is not a booze sermon nor an excuse for some weak person to start drinking again.
  7. The objective is not to get the believers ON or off the wagon but to teach what the bible says about drinking.
  8. The fact that the bible has a lot to say about the subject proves that drinking has been an issue for a very long time in the Human Race.
    - i. Drunkenness is a SIN
    - ii. Drinking is NOT.

#### 1Tim 5:22

**v22: Do not ordain any man into the ministry too hastily or quickly, STOP participating, contributing a share in, sins belonging to others; be guarding, keeping yourself with regard to a pure Mental Attitude.**

#### 1Tim 5:23

**v23: No longer drink only water, but be regularly making moderate use of a SMALL AMOUNT of wine for the sake of your central nervous system and your frequent illnesses.**

### Lesson #84

### Series # 467

### 1Tim 5:24

- I. Freedom Through Military victory:
- A. Don Leslie Michael, Spec 4 US Army, C Company, 4<sup>th</sup> Battalion of the 503<sup>rd</sup> Infantry, 171<sup>st</sup> Airborne Brigade, Vietnam, 8 April, 1967
  - B. Milton L Allie, PFC US Army, 3<sup>rd</sup> Platoon, B Company, 2<sup>nd</sup> Battalion, 503<sup>rd</sup> Infantry, 171<sup>st</sup> Airborne Brigade.
- II. Doctrine of Drinking continued:
- A. Classification of Alcoholic Beverage
1. Alcohol is what is found as a solvent in medicine and in consumable beverages of many types.

2. We live in a time of **Human History** when there are numerous categories of alcoholic beverage which is used in many different ways for many different purposes.
    - i. Medicines
    - ii. Seductions
    - iii. Escape
    - iv. Frantic Search for happiness
    - v. Stimulation
    - vi. Relaxation
    - vii. Celebration
  3. Alcohol is both toxic and beneficial, destructive and healthful, a curse and blessing.
  4. Therefore a classification of Alcoholic Beverage is very helpful.
  5. Beneficial Functions for Alcohol
    - i. Medicine where it is used as a solvent for medical preparations and prescriptions and as a solvent and preservative.
    - ii. Alcoholic beverage distilled from Grains, Whiskey.
      - a. Whiskey is classified as Scotch, Irish and American.
      - b. If you are interested in the categories and classifications of whiskey and how they are made 25 min into this lesson.
    - iii. Vodka is manufacture from Potatoes and Maize
      - a. People drink this because it is tasteless and being a communist drink it and all communists should be poured into sewers.
    - iv. Gin is made from the Juniper berry which gives it its flavor and is made from malt, maize and rye.
      - a. The dutch call this Schnapps
      - b. With sugar or syrup added this becomes a cordial.
    - v. Wine is the fermentation of various fruit juices primarily the Grape
      - a. Table Wine == Bordeaux, Burgundies and Hocht, White Wines
      - b. Opperteiths == Sherry
      - c. Fortified == Port
      - d. Sparkling Wine == Champagne
    - vi. Brandy is fermented juice of grape and other fruits aged for time in Wood.
      - a. It does not age in a bottle but in a wooden cask.
    - vii. Liqueurs flavored spirits sweetened by the addition of sugar or syrups
      - a. Benedictine, Cream DE Mint, Etc.
      - b. Absinthe which is very dangerous
      - c. Sasaphas also sued for root beer.
    - viii. BEER
      - a. Garbage generally.
      - b. Oldest form of alcoholic beverage with a record of Babylonian beer going back to 4000 BC
      - c. Rhameses III of Egypt consecrated to the gods of Egypt 466000 jugs of beer.
      - d. Brewing became well known and even Chaldeans had it and it spread to Egypt Greece and Rome.
      - e. Pilgrims landed on Plymouth rock on the Mayflower prematurely because they ran out of BEER. See the Log of the Mayflower.
    - ix. Most alcohol falls into one of these 8 categories or an offshoot of it.
      - a. Therefore the opportunities for imbibing alcohol have become vast.
- B. The bible condemns DRUNKENNESS not drinking and it is condemned as a sin: **Is 5:11, 5:22, 28:7-8, Prov 20:1, 23:20, Rom 13;13, 1Cor 5:11, Eph 5:18,**
1. Drunkenness is always trouble and being able to drink more than anyone else means nothing except as far as sin is concerned



2. It is a handicap for those in authority such as:
  - i. Kings **Prov 31:4-5**
  - ii. Spiritual **1Tim 3:3, Tit 1;7**
  - iii. Deacons **1Tim 1:8**
  - iv. They are not forbidden alcohol but warned against drunkenness as it may lead to abuse of their authority.
3. Condemned in some bible characters:
  - i. Noah **Gen 9:21**
  - ii. Nabal **1Sam 25:36-7**
  - iii. Lot **Gen 19:32-26**
  - iv. Ephriem **Is 28:1**

C. Adverse Effects of Alcohol:

1. Drunkenness or excess use of alcohol leads to:
  - i. Crime
  - ii. Suicide
  - iii. Divorce
  - iv. Traffic Accidents
  - v. Economic & Industrial losses
  - vi. Loss of health
  - vii. Misery in Life
  - viii. Poverty
  - ix. National Disaster.
2. Alcohol is NOT a stimulant but is a DEPRESSANT:
  - i. It lowers inhibitions
  - ii. Dulls reflexes
  - iii. Destroys common sense and good judgment
  - iv. Stimulates Mental Attitude Sins
  - v. Causes drunks to Kill, Abuse others, Lose integrity, Become a Slut
3. Drunkenness also produces MORE than impulsive behavior and social tragedies and is the source of many diseases.
  - i. It causes weakening of health resulting in disease not directly induced by its abuse.
4. If you want to Kill Self take up the dare to chug a 5<sup>th</sup> of something where the alcohol moves from the stomach to the blood stream immediately and can destroy the Oxygen carrying capacity of the blood and then kill you.
5. Excessive alcohol effects the brain in many ways including:
  - i. Cerebral hemorrhage
  - ii. Delerium Tremens
  - iii. Korsakovs Psychosis
  - iv. Machifava Pignamies Disease
  - v. ETC
  - vi. The liver can remove about 6 CC of alcohol from the blood per hour but NO MORE.
  - vii. Therefore it also attacks the liver causing Cirrhosis.
  - viii. Vernikies Disease
6. It cooperated with the Old Sin Nature to lower standards and resistance to sin in all categories.
  - i. Excessive Drinking or Drunkenness is not only a sin but has dire spiritual and physical consequences.
7. The bible gives no encouragement nor excuse for excessive drinking and there are 2 types of excessive drinkers:
  - i. Drinking a Large Amount at one time

- ii. Drinking for days and days over a long time
        - a. It can be drinking heavily and steady drinking.
      - iii. There are 2 kinds of people who have drinking problems:
        - a. Those who cannot stop steady drinking.
        - b. Those who cannot stop heavy drinking.
        - c. Both of these should avoid any alcohol except in medicines.
  - 8. Chemistry of one's blood and effectiveness of one's liver is what determines how much a person can handle in the blood.
    - i. It is how much your liver can remove compared to what you are taking in.
  - 9. When your blood alcohol reaches a certain percentage (different for all people) it causes you to lose everything:
    - i. Honor
    - ii. Integrity
    - iii. Reflexes
    - iv. ETC.
    - v. Intoxication or inebriation is a sin and there is no benefit to drinking excessive amounts of alcohol.
    - vi. Some people have such body chemistry that they cannot remove even a nominal amount of alcohol from the blood and should avoid it totally.
- D. The proper and improper use of alcohol:
- 1. The bible does not forbid drinking:
  - 2. Wine attacks authority and function of leadership and thus if NOT for Kings, **Prov 34:4-7**
  - 3. Strong drink is to be given to one dying
  - 4. Wine should be given to one whose life is bitter with great trouble (Timothy).
  - 5. Helps relax a person and also helps digestion **1Tim 5:23**
- E. Principles:
- 1. This passage indicates that WINE or other alcoholic beverages have both a relaxing and beneficial effect on Timothy./
  - 2. Paul is prescribing a MODERATE amount of alcohol to relax the nervous and high strung Timothy.
  - 3. A limited amount of wine acts as a sedative and too much is toxic.
  - 4. Wine stimulates appetite through increase of blood in the stomach therefore gastric juices and acids and simultaneously relaxes the Central Nervous System.
  - 5. Benefits of Limited use of Wine:
    - i. To brain and Nervous system producing a sedative effect
    - ii. To the stomach and digestive system producing appetite and better digestion.
    - iii. To circulation in OLDER People and dilates the blood vessels and improves circulation. **Ps 104:15,**
- F. Where Jesus turned water to wine **John 2:1-11**
- 1. Jesus was invited to a wedding in Cana in Galilee along with his disciples.
  - 2. A crisis occurred when they ran out of wine
  - 3. Jesus replied to his mother in v4 saying that neither He nor his mother were hurt by this fact having arrived late and having had no wine.
  - 4. However Mary replied that Jesus should have left before the wine ran out the party having lasted at least a week.
  - 5. Jesus say to her SO WHAT neither of us have to depend on wine for anything.
  - 6. Jesus challenges Mary's subtle hint for them to depart by saying "My hour has not yet come"
  - 7. This is reference to his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross **John 7:30, 8:20, 12:23, 27, 16:32, 17:1**
    - i. v7 is very important in understanding that his hour for Substitutionary Spiritual Death has not come.

- ii. Neither depended on wine for a good time.
    - iii. It states that the departure from the wedding and life had not yet come.
    - iv. He implied that he would stay and rectify the situation doing something about it.
  - 8. Mom told the servants to do whatever Jesus told them to do.
    - i. The running out of wine did create a crisis for hospitality and after explaining that drinking wine had nothing to do with salvation he then performed a miracle.
  - 9. Wine is not an issue and he would not let it be an issue and he stayed and provided the best wine anyone ever had EVER.
  - 10. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ did turn water into WINE but his miracle does not condone nor condemn drinking alcohol.
  - 11. Like all miracles the purpose was to focus attention on who and what Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is, the God man.
  - 12. The real issue is Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God not whether you drink wine or not, not a social crisis or solution, but it is a big temptation to throw into the witnessing of the gospel corrections for the social or personal problems the person has.
- G. There were 6 water pots in this miracle which hold 20 to 30 gallons therefore 120 to 150 gallons of water.
  - 1. Wine is composed of
    - i. 70 – 85 % water
    - ii. 12-30 % Grape sugar
    - iii. 12-30 % Ethanol
    - iv. Other alcohols
    - v. CO<sub>2</sub>
    - vi. organic acids
    - vii. Glycerin
    - viii. Microorganisms for fermentation
  - 2. From the standpoint of performing some chemical trick it would be impossible for Jesus to have turned water into wine.
    - i. It is a miracle where about 120-150 gallons of water were turned into 120-150 gallons of wine.
  - 3. It was a reversal of custom to serve the best wine last and this was a miracle for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ to turn water into the best ever wine.
  - 4. This is not juice but WINE
  - 5. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the issue not WINE and this miracle gave everyone in Cana an opportunity to be saved.
    - i. This was a presentation of the Grace Plan of God and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as only savior.
    - ii. Drinking was not the issue, Wine was not the issue, but the issue was focus on Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and either Yes or No to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- H. Drinking should also be related to the Divine Laws of Modus Operandi:
  - 1. Liberty where every believer has a right to drink a moderate amount of alcoholic beverage.
    - i. This is not a sin
    - ii. There are other laws which supersede at times this law.
  - 2. Expediency where it is best not to drink under certain conditions such as witnessing or when it becomes issue for the unbeliever.
  - 3. Love where it is best to refrain from drinking when there is a potential to lead astray a weaker believer.
  - 4. Supreme sacrifice where drinking is prohibited when it hinders a specific ministry or function in life.
- I. Alcohol is a part of National Disaster **Joel 1:4-6, Is 28:1-9, Jer 13:12-17**

1. Drunkenness is a contributing factor in invasion of other nations and the inability to fight to repel them.
- J. Common Sense in Drinking:
1. Even an unbeliever with average common sense can handle this problem of Alcohol.
  2. Alcohol is WASTED on Young people and they ought not to drink and are neither smart enough nor wise enough to gain from drinking ie <30 years of age.
  3. Young people pick up all the pitfalls and no benefits from drinking.
    - i. Youth does not need alcohol except in medicine
    - ii. YOUTH IS TRULY WASTED ON THE YOUNG.
  4. Do not drink while frustrated or unhappy.
    - i. When you link emotion with drinking it always brings a problem.
    - ii. Do not drink when emotionally upset.
  5. Young ladies who date strangers (DUMB) should be teetotalers and the rule is NEVER DRINK with strangers or in a strange place.
  6. Never Drink alone.
    - i. Moderate drinking is for social life.
  7. Never drink on the job or while working on anything.
  8. Never drink while operating a motor vehicle, airplane, or any type of machinery.
  9. Never mix guns and alcohol and never drink when shooting.
  10. Drink moderately ONLY with friends whom you trust
  11. Drunkenness and dissipation is a waste of time and LIFE.
    - i. Drinking is not forbidden by the bible but Drunkenness is stupidity and sin as well.
  12. The christian Lush is a reversionist who has failed to assimilate and use doctrine to grow in grace and advance to Spiritual Maturity.
    - i. He is filled with alcohol not Bible Doctrine.

**Lesson #85      Series # 467      1Tim 5:24**

- I. Freedom through Military Victory:
- A. We are a limited free people today and many of our freedoms in this 21<sup>st</sup> century beginning have been encroached on by our federal government which is immoral, evil and totally out of line with Laws of Divine Establishment functions.
    1. The basic biblical principle one on which our nation was founded is that each of us as members of the Human Race have the privilege of living as long as God sees fit to keep us here this is therefore the RIGHT TO LIFE.
    2. There is also a RIGHT TO PRIVACY.
    3. Third there is also a RIGHT TO PROPERTY
    4. Fourth there is a RIGHT TO PURSUE LIFE ON THIS EARTH WITHOUT RESTRAINT FROM GOVERNMENT OR LAW AS LONG AS ONE DOES NOT INTERFERE WITH ANOTHER'S RIGHT AND DOES NOT VIOLATE CRIMINAL LAW.
  - B. These rights are recognized by our constitution and bill of rights and the purpose of such recognition is acknowledgment of their place in the Laws of Divine Establishment.
    1. The Laws of Divine Establishment is found in the scripture.
    2. The purpose of freedom is to allow each individual to fulfill the purpose of the Angelic Conflict whereby man was created in order to resolve it.
    3. Man was given free will and he has a RIGHT to make MISTAKES or SUCCESSES, He has a right to self determination as far as his life is concerned.
      - i. This applies to ADULT MAN not children who must function under the authority of their parents.
  - C. There have been incredible attacks on our freedom in the past 75 years and they all come from politicians and it is the military which provides our freedom and the politician destroys it.

1. We have had the greatest attacks of EVIL in liberal bleeding heart socialistic welfare functions, Government interference in industry and business putting the principle of free enterprise under the danger of crumbling.
2. This is due to congress setting up laws and then giving dictatorial authority to incompetent individuals to execute these EVIL laws and the ability to add to these laws with “rules” which have no one in oversight for their creation or enforcement.
  - i. Who can work and NOT
  - ii. Who can be fired and NOT
3. Federal government today is the greatest blackmailer in the history of the world and daily crimes are committed against legitimate businesses.
4. Dictatorial and tyrannical power has been given to Ecological, ‘Equal Rights’ and Educational organizations and the tyranny imposed by these is equal to or beyond any tyranny ever imposed ever in all of **Human History**.
5. Rights which belong to us as humans have been curtailed and privacy invaded, the principle of HOME as a Castle has been ignored (but in fact today in 2017 it is slowly coming back) and the idea of confiscation of firearms from individuals, interference with transportation vehicles and what kind we can have and the kind of safety features which are MANDATED is totally evil.
6. The FEDERAL Government has no right to tell any industry how it will produce its products and what standards they must be produced under.
  - i. If a person wants safety features and the company offers them that is great but the government has no right to dictate that everyone MUST have such things.
  - ii. THIS IS INCREDIBLE EVIL. 1Tim 6
7. 1975-6 should be a time of GREAT MOURNING since the freedoms which the founding fathers have put together in our constitution and bill of rights and which we have enjoyed on the very basis of influence of the word of God have been and are being removed.
8. Every facet of freedom is attacked today and the word of God says that all freedom comes through military victory and military victory **DEPENDS** on the Industrial Complex in a nation to produce.
  - i. In the 2<sup>nd</sup> Punic war the industrial complex of Rome is the only thing which saved them as they lost 100 times at least in 17 years and finally **WON** because of the ability of the industrial complex and this brought the greatest free enterprise systems to Rome.
  - ii. This began about 200 years before the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and lasted at least 300 years after the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - iii. Free enterprise led to economic prosperity of Rome for over 500 years.
9. Assyria was in a very bad position in plains and surrounded by mountains and fierce war like nations but Assyria did more to manufacture **IRON** at the beginning of the Iron Age and as a result of their industrial complex and their military they had power and it gave them freedom.
10. Prosperity and Blessing are always related to freedom but this is the result of free enterprise and strong military establishment.
11. We in the United States of America have benefited from the historical trends of the past and principles of Bible Doctrine in the founding of our nation.
  - i. The founding fathers used great wisdom in recognizing the rights of the individual which are summarized in the original “Bill of Rights” and Amendments to the constitution.
  - ii. All these and the constitution itself have basically been set aside by the liberals in the media and politicians in our government.

12. One of the great freedoms which is still extent is freedom of worship and assembly and under this the freedom to choose for daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - i. There is or can be still an encroachment on the daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception by any person in any congregation which is guilty of Arrogance or jealousy or Bitterness, or implacability or pettiness, or vanity or who maligns or judges another and this is a violation of the privacy of any person who is a victim of this.
- D. The principle of the last 2 verses on 1Tim 5 is basically that there are always those people around you who want to run your life and think they can do a better job of making your decisions than you can.
  1. These are those who suffer from an arrogance related to their own perceived perfection and your failures.
  2. There will always be someone around to try to put you down and intrude on your privacy and destroy your freedom and coerce you into a course of action which is compatible with their ideas.
  3. Some people derive happiness by trying to get everyone to conform to them.
  4. There are 3 types of people who want to run your life:
    - i. You have a right to do so under freedom.
    - ii. Nosy people who intrude on your privacy and malign your freedom.
    - iii. Those close to you and have some legitimate authority or not.
    - iv. God himself who has a right to run your life since you are now a member of the Royal Family of God.
  5. Just as God has a sense of humor as part of his personality and an extension of his essence GOD is also a Gentleman and does not ever violate the volition of the individual no matter how bad it is directed.
    - i. God has set up the principles and policies by which we are to function in this life in order to CHOOSE for him and only as we do this in freedom is God glorified.
    - ii. Our daily choice must be to function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
    - iii. Our daily choice must be to make decisions from the discernment provided by Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and it is the objective of God to make you totally independent of anyone else.
    - iv. When it comes to decisions and choices in life we are to have the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which enables us to understand and make decisions which will honor the lord from our own free will.
  6. Our freedom and free will is the great issue in the Angelic Conflict and the basis for angelic being observation of **Human History** as well as convocation in heaven itself.
    - i. While many may like to run your life God has set up a system by which we can make decisions from our own volition to do the Will of God and therefore be under his plan of grace and be blessed by him by understanding his Bible Doctrine.
    - ii. It takes discipline to learn anything especially the word of God and we are under the discipline of the Pastor Teacher in the local church classroom, and the bible teaches the rules for submission to the authority of the Pastor Teacher etc.
  7. All Pastor Teachers are like us sinners and we learn Bible Doctrine from sinners who are imperfect and thereby we grow in grace and understanding of Bible Doctrine.
    - i. There never was nor will ever be a single person who is free from sin.
    - ii. We must be aware of the fact that everything we learn in life we learned from sinners from the beginning of our life till our death.
    - iii. Every bit of Bible Doctrine we ever learn we learned from a sinner.
    - iv. The point is that everyone is a sinner from Birth except Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and we never were hung up learning from them.

8. When Timothy shifted into gear and asserted his authority as he should have and removed gossiping women and straightened our Hymenaeas and Alexander and the straightened out the bullies and removed the apostates and defined clearly what was considered EVIL he suddenly came under great criticism.
  - i. Timothy is going to get tough and straighten out the local church at Ephesus and use his authority properly since the local church at Ephesus was the center of Christianity at that time.
  - ii. He has learned his lesson and is ready to go to work for real now
  - iii. Once he starts to use his authority properly those who have been abusing his authority and usurping it and bullying it will rise up in complaint against him.

II. Anyone who is a member of the Human Race is a sinner whether we know them or NOT.

- A. We have privacy and life before the lord and know what to do about our sins and we don't allow them to keep us from doing our work.
  1. Everything we do in life involves sinners and everyone we meet in life is a sinner and we MUST wake up and get off our damned high horse with regard to pastors and they are sinners but have a specialized gift and we don't have it and we must get straightened out and LEARN Bible Doctrine from them.
  2. Some of the greatest bible teachers of the past were the worst sinners imaginable.
- B. Lil Ole Timothy is just about as bad a sinner as ever came along and is a weak spineless creature but has a marvelous gift of teaching and apparently finally after this reprimand he straightened out his life.
  1. This applies directly to Timothy but also applies to us directly NOW.
  2. Anyone who has been in the pulpit is a sinner and all pastors like all people sin all their life but HOPEFULLY understand Rebound and how to recover the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and keep moving in the Spiritual Life.
  3. Everyone has sins and thus there are 2 categories:
    - i. Those who have obvious sins
    - ii. Those who have hidden sins.
  4. The point is that we should not be searching for those sins of those who sin and who don't have obvious sins but should be minding our own business.
  5. Our ability to discern some sins and not others leads us to declare some people BAD and others GOOD and this is a GRAVE Error not authorized by Bible Doctrine.
    - i. The fact that a person can reform from conspicuous to inconspicuous sins is meaningless as far as spirituality and spiritual growth is concerned and this person may in fact be totally saturated and mired in reversionism.
  6. We are not qualified to judge the sins of others except in the area of:
    - i. Our children
    - ii. As an executive or anyone with authority those under us
  7. The fact is that with regard to sin some people are discreet and some don't give a damn if you know their failings.
    - i. We assume that the discreet people are the nice people and we make them out idols but sooner or later see their feet of clay.
    - ii. We must remember that the only perfect sinless person is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  8. It is blasphemous to suggest or imply that you have reached sinless perfect or can in fact do so or that you are a perfect person.
- C. Principles:
  1. Some Pastor Teachers have conspicuous prominent obvious sins and their congregations know their weaknesses as does everyone who is in contact with them.
    - i. This is also true of many people
    - ii. While others have sins which are unknown.

2. You will notice this does not hinder the ministry or teaching of the Pastor Teacher guardian of the local church and when he recovers with rebound he goes right on with his function as Pastor Teacher.
3. Everyone knew timothy's failures and weaknesses and many in Ephesus took advantage of them he being:
  - i. Momma's Boy
  - ii. Weak sister personality
  - iii. Trying to LOVE everyone in the wrong way.
  - iv. Trying to win popularity
  - v. He was sweet and ever unkind
  - vi. Bullied by everyone.
  - vii. These people in Ephesus used these weaknesses to express their bullying and power lust.
4. All believers after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God continue to have an Old Sin Nature.
  - i. All believers after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God continue to sin although spiritual advance changes the type of sin.
  - ii. Pastor Teacher is NO EXCEPTION.
5. Through the grace provision of the rebound procedure any believer can recover from carnality.
  - i. Not any believer can easily recover from reversionism.
  - ii. It only takes as long as it takes to NAME a sin to God and forgiveness is his.
6. SIN is not the issue in the Christian Way of Life.
  - i. **(ff{Satan's Policy is Good & Evil but Sin is the result of the fall of man and the corruption of the genetics of his perfection giving each human being an Old Sin Nature which results in SIN but this is NOT part of the PLAN or POLICY of Satan and being outside the plan and policy of Satan SIN had to be paid for in order for MANKIND to participate in the resolution of the Angelic Conflict, therefore the necessity for the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross and the need for the believer to operate under the procedure of rebound in order to maintain his Status Quo in the Plan of God and outside of the plan of Satan. It is the plan and policy of Satan which must run the course of the Angelic Conflict in order that God might demonstrate its failings and the benefits of his GRACE plan and policy under which the Logistical Grace and Righteousness of God and Justice of God all work together all the time.})**
  - ii. The issue in the Christian Way of Life is EVIL vs DOCTRINE
    - a. Evil is the THINKING and POLICY of Satan while Bible Doctrine is the THINKING and POLICY DELINEATION of the GRACE PLAN of God.
  - iii. Look at Saul who was a believer:
    - a. Saul was a very MORAL man and a Believer and a family man and MONOGAMOUS.
    - b. He was a good husband, father and ruler and was humble sweet and kind loving and thoughtful and everyone loved him.
    - c. He was clean cut and his brand of sinning was related to his influence from EVIL.
    - d. It was not his sinning which was the issue but what he THOUGHT.
    - e. He began under reversionism to reject Bible Doctrine and thus came under the influence of evil and this brought him warning, intensive and dying Divine Discipline.
    - f. He was a total failure and is a perfect illustration of a clean cut moral believer who rejected Bible Doctrine and was a total failure.



- g. He illustrates EVERYTHING wrong in the Christian Way of Life.
  - iv. David also a believer:
    - a. He had 6 wives and 20 mistresses obviously was not living a moral life.
    - b. He was a hell raiser and guilty of the worst sin that being MURDER.
    - c. He did everything wrong but was under influence of Bible Doctrine ONLY and he knew about REBOUND and used it properly.
    - d. He was consistent in Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and GOD blessed him by making him wealthy beyond everyone in his time and then God made him a great general, then king, then the greatest king who ever lived.
  - v. David was one of the greatest believers who ever lived but it is obviously NOT sin which is the issue between these 2 men.
    - a. Saul had his brand of sin which are not very well known
    - b. David had his brand of sin and everyone knows all of his sins and failures.
    - c. Obviously it is NOT sin which is the ISSUE but GOOD AND EVIL.
7. The issue in life is WHAT YOU THINK:
    - i. Are you thinking Divine Viewpoint or Human Viewpoint?
    - ii. Are you influenced by Bible Doctrine for Divine Viewpoint thinking or are you influenced by Evil for Human Viewpoint thinking.
  8. EVIL vs Bible Doctrine is always the issue and it is what controls your soul.
    - i. Satan cannot control your soul with demon possession as a believer but with EVIL saturating your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he can.
    - ii. The Lord seeks to control your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul with Bible Doctrine and Divine Viewpoint thinking.
    - iii. In both cases VOLITION is never tampered with and we CHOOSE for either EVIL or Bible Doctrine using the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  9. Sin was resolved at the cross and evil and sin are not the same but often overlap in arrogance.
  10. While sins of the Pastor Teacher can be obvious to the congregation just as certain sins of the congregation can be obvious to the Pastor Teacher and others, this is NOT an issue.
    - i. This discerning of the sins of others does not deter the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and the Spiritual Life.
    - ii. It is impossible to ignore some sins of others when they force them into your life.
    - iii. Respectability is what occurs when a person forgets what they were and what they are, a SINNER.
    - iv. Sin can be changed to a subtle type but ALL human beings all sin and ALL believers sin until their death.
  11. The discernment of other's sins does not deter the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  12. The ministry of the Pastor Teacher depends on the lord and NO carnality can ruin the ministry of the Pastor Teacher.
    - i. People can try to ruin a pastors ministry.
    - ii. The Pastor Teacher can ruin his own ministry but he stands or falls to the lord
    - iii. The Pastor's ministry depends on the lord not on his sins or failures in carnality.
  13. While the sins of the Pastor Teacher may be obvious it should and does not hinder the Royal Family of God from learning Bible Doctrine from that Pastor Teacher.
  14. SIN is NOT the issue in the life of the believer EVIL is the issue.
    - i. The Pastor Teacher can sin and still have a great ministry because of the rebound procedure, but he cannot become involved in or influenced by evil and have a ministry at all.

- ii. The most EVIL pastors are always giving messages on how to love everyone and be nice to those you can't stand to be around and all forms of hypocrisy.
- 15. YOU can learn from sinful people and everything you have ever learned you learn from sinful people.
- 16. Everything you have ever learned in every category of knowledge or life you learn from sinful people, ALL people are sinful.
  - i. Some sinful persons are teachers
  - ii. It is CRAP to say you cannot learn from a Pastor Teacher who sins and this is stupid subjectivity and Pollyanna hypocrisy and this person will fall away into the spirituality by emotionalism.
- 17. If the Pastor Teacher fulfills his ministry of studying and teaching and keeping short accounts with God and being under Filling of God the Holy Spirit most of the time then YOU CAN LEARN from him.
  - i. If he does not keep short accounts with regard to his sins with God through rebound then he moves into reversionism and IT IS REVERSIONISM AND THE INFLUENCE OF EVIL WHICH DESTROYS THE Pastor Teacher NOT SIN.
  - ii. Some of the greatest pastors who ever lived were GREAT because they were NEVER influenced by EVIL not because then never sinned.
  - iii. You live in a world of sinful people with Old Sin Natures and every person you ever encounter and everything useful in life you have ever obtained has come from a sinful person with an Old Sin Nature.
  - iv. One thing a person never gets tired of using is their Old Sin Nature.

D. Principles:

- 1. The carnality of the Pastor Teacher has nothing to do with his ministry.
  - i. If he understands and uses REBOUND and stays in with the word and studies and teaches HE WILL LEAD YOU TO Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- 2. Every Pastor Teacher has an Old Sin Nature and even the sweet ones.
- 3. Every Old Sin Nature has an area of weakness which is the source of the temptation to sin.
- 4. Therefore every pastor whether you know it or NOT Sins.
- 5. No Pastor Teacher gets away with carnality, he is subject to double Divine Discipline for his sins where we only receive single Divine Discipline.
- 6. No pastors carnality REAL or IMAGINED should ever hinder your concentration on the teaching of Bible Doctrine in the local church.

E. Doctrine of the Old Sin Nature:

- 1. Definition:
  - i. The Old Sin Nature is part of the genetic structure of man corrupted at the fall of Adam and Ishah when they opposed the Plan of God in the garden and transmitted by the male to every human being in fertilization which results in pregnancy.
  - ii. We have in our soul a structure where in the Left Lobe of the Soul information is processed and the Right Lobe is where information is stored.
  - iii. The Right Lobe is where you think and as you think so you are and it includes:
    - a. Frame of Reference
    - b. Memory Center
    - c. Vocabulary Storage
    - d. Categorical Storage
    - e. Norms and Standards
    - f. Launch Pad
    - g. Emotion
  - iv. There is a difference between Religion and Christianity.
    - a. Religion is the devils Trump

- b. Christianity is a relationship with God through the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - v. Emotion is not a thinking part of the soul but a responder to the Right Lobe and is without **norms and standards**.
  - vi. The Old Sin Nature was again acquired by the genetic corruption of Adam from his opposition to the Plan of God voluntarily and knowingly.
  - vii. The Old Sin Nature has an area of weakness which produces temptation to 3 areas of sin. **Heb 12:1**
    - a. Mental
    - b. Verbal
    - c. Overt
  - viii. The Old Sin Nature has an area of strength which motivates for: **Is 64:6, Rom 8:8**
    - a. Human Good or Self Righteousnesses
    - b. Evil
  - ix. It has a LUST pattern which motivates for inordinate desires: **Rom 7:7**
  - x. It has a TREND toward:
    - a. Asceticism
    - b. Lasciviousness
    - c. These trends determine the direction of the Frantic Search for happiness and areas of temptation and sinning.
  - xi. The Old Sin Nature comes to us through physical fertilization, conception and birth with the exception of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ born from a virgin without the corrupt genetic material from a male human father.
  - xii. It is the motivation for the soul's rebellion against God and the basis for the spiritual death of man
  - xiii. It is the source of all temptation to sin in the life of man.
  - xiv. It is the corruption of the genetic structure of the human body acquired at conception transmitted from Adam throughout the whole Human Race and the source of all temptation to sin in the life.
  - xv. *{(ff) This is still the period when the Old Sin Nature was being taught at part of the SOUL and I have attempted to correct this position based on what was taught in much later studies and then as ongoing doctrinal corrections}*
- 2. The essence of the Old Sin Nature **Rom 6:6**
  - i. The Old Sin Nature is called our "old Man" because of its antiquity dating back to the fall of original man.
  - ii. Because we have an Old Sin Nature we DO NOT have to be enslaved to it.
- 3. Biblical Nomenclature for the Old Sin Nature:
  - i. Sarx == Flesh Gal 5:16, Eph 2:3
  - ii. Old Man Eph 4:22, Col 3:9, originating in antiquity with the fall of Adam
  - iii. Carnal Rom 7:14, 1Cor 3:1-3 is a person under control of the Old Sin Nature.
  - iv. Hamartia == Sin in singular rom 5:12, 7:14, 1Cor 15:56, 1John 1:8
  - v. Heart has the connotation of the Old Sin Nature as it relates to EVIL, Jer 17:9, Matt 12:34-35, 15:19, Mk 7:21-23
- 4. Origin of the Old Sin Nature: Rom 5:12
  - i. The Old Sin Nature entered into the world by the fall of Adam and the resulting corruption of his genetic structure.
  - ii. Although created man perfect without sin or the Old Sin Nature Man eventually figured out how to ACQUIRE it for himself.
  - iii. God did not create the Old Sin Nature in man.
  - iv. By his very essence God cannot sin, solicit to sin, nor condone sin.
  - v. No characteristic of the Essence of God can ever be involved in any way with sin.

- vi. The Absolute Righteousness of God and the immutability of God precludes him from every having anything ever to do with sin and he cannot cater to man.
  - vii. Love has nothing to do with the weakness of man as sin and the Love of God provided the motivation for the solution to sin but he WILL NOT CATER to the weakness of man in sinning.
  - viii. Eternal Life means that God cannot die and Immutability + Absolute Righteousness + Eternal Life means God cannot sin and cannot perpetuate sin in any way.
  - ix. **This appears to be the LOGICAL answer as to why GOD MUST condemn those who are involved with sin and do not take the salvation solution to the Lake of Fire both angelic creatures and human beings.**
  - x. God is absolutely perfect and a perfect God cannot create an imperfect thing and everything which came from the creative hand of God was PERFECT and the only reason it ever became IMPERFECT is the result of God giving to all his higher creation FREE WILL and CHOICE to choose for or against God himself.
  - xi. GOD IS NOT THE ORIGINATOR OF SIN.
  - xii. Sin originated in man the same way it occurred in the angelic creation with Negative Volition in the free choices of the creature.
  - xiii. Satan was the original sinner and the author of sin.
  - xiv. Man in the garden was tempted by Satan.
  - xv. By disobedience or Negative Volition to the divine prohibition in the garden the Old Sin Nature was formed in man with the resultant spiritual death and separation from God.
  - xvi. Man from his own soul choices manufactured and perpetuated the Old Sin Nature.
  - xvii. Through copulation and fertilization in procreation the Old Sin Nature is transmitted and perpetuated in the Human Race.
5. The perpetuation and consequences of the Old Sin Nature **1Tim 2:13-14**
- i. Because of the deception of Eve and the free choice of Adam the Old Sin Nature is perpetuated in the Human Race by copulation and fertilization of the pure female ovum with the corrupt male sperm.
  - ii. Because the man disobeyed the mandate of God in full cognizance of what he was doing when he sinned he is the perpetrator.
  - iii. The woman was deceived by Satan and when she fell she became the first HUMAN sinner and then she worked on the man who became the 2<sup>nd</sup> sinner.
  - iv. The man was cognizant of what he was doing while the woman was ignorant of what she had done.
  - v. BOTH sinned in the original fall and ignorance is no excuse and both used their personal volition to sin.
  - vi. The woman wanted the fruit and her volition took her to the tree and allowed her to take and eat it.
  - vii. When Adam went for the fruit he KNEW exactly what he was doing and he TOOK THE FRUIT FROM THE WOMAN.
  - viii. Both are guilty and both involved their own personal volition.
  - ix. This is an area of GREAT weakness in our law today and has always been one.
    - a. People who are insane or temporarily insane are not held responsible for their actions but in fact when they MURDER someone they should be EXECUTED for it like every other murderer should be.
    - b. If they are not executed they will do the same thing again and again when they do not know what they are doing and they continue to run their own lives and there is no law hindering them in any way.
    - c. This says in effect that insane people are not subject to law when in fact they must be subject to it just as anyone else.

- d. This is often just an excuse and execution of a few will stop this excuse quickly.
- e. When you murder someone when you are MAD at them this is temporary insanity and just getting mad is temporary insanity in the first place and this does not mean anything since volition is involved and it is YOUR volition therefore YOU are responsible.
- x. The principle that ignorance or inability to comprehend the gravity of what one is doing is an excuse for what has been done is erroneous.
- xi. God in this Absolute Righteousness and Absolute Justice says NO it is NOT an excuse but it does make a difference.
- xii. Both the woman and man created their own Old Sin Nature by violation of the prohibition of God thus committing personal Sin.
- xiii. Both the man and woman in the garden became under spiritual death.
- xiv. In copulation the Old Sin Nature is transmitted to the fetus by way of the sperm of the male.
- xv. When 'neshemah' is given to the fetus at birth the Old Sin Nature having come through the male then Adam's Original Sin is imputed to its rightful home the Old Sin Nature resulting in condemnation from God at physical birth.
- xvi. When Mary had become pregnant she was a virgin and her ovum was miraculously fertilized by God the Holy Spirit and her fetus was without the Old Sin Nature corruption but the virgin Mary herself was normally born and had her own Old Sin Nature. **Ps 51:5**
- xvii. We in the Human Race have 2 kinds of sinners in this world some born again sinners and some unbeliever sinners and it is only attitude toward Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ which makes the difference. **Ps 58:3, Eph 2:3, Eph 2:1, 5**
- xviii. The believer continues to have an Old Sin Nature after Adjustment to the Justice of God **1Cor 3:1, 1John 1:8, Rom 7:14**
- 6. The Old Sin Nature is the source of transitory pleasure in life **Heb 11:25**
- 7. There is the frustration of the Old Sin Nature **Rom 7:15**
- 8. Divine judgment solves the frustration of the Old Sin Nature
  - i. Judgment Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross 2Cor 5:23, 1Pet 2:24
    - a. It takes JUDGMENT to solve the problems of the Old Sin Nature.
    - b. On the cross the area of weakness was judged and all sins were imputed to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross and paid for.
  - ii. Believers judge their own sin in the rebound procedure
    - a. This is the way sins are judged after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God 1John 1:9, 1Cor 11:28-31, 1Cor 3.
    - b. There is discipline for sin but this is mitigated if we judge ourselves often being removed.
  - iii. Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ **1Cor 3:12-16**, where all Human Good in the believers of history will be judged and destroyed.
    - a. Human Good is not judged on the cross being a part of the plan and policy of Satan it must continue throughout the Angelic Conflict in order to demonstrate that it is not sufficient for salvation and that Divine Good from the grace Plan of God and spiritual advance is all that is acceptable.
    - b. Human Good will be judged in every unbeliever at the Great White Throne Judgment.
      - i) No sins will be judged here since all sin was judged in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
      - ii) Their good deeds will be brought forth and judged and this will complete the total judgment of the Old Sin Nature.
- 9. There are 2 manifest parts of the Old Sin Nature:

- i. Area of Weakness producing Sin
    - a. This is resolved by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross
  - ii. Area of strength producing Human Good
    - a. Those who reject the cross will get their Human Good judged at the Great White Throne Judgment
    - b. Those who accept the cross will get their Human Good judged at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ.
  - iii. There are NO SINS ever mentioned at the Great White Throne Judgment judgment all having been judged at the cross.
    - a. At the Great White Throne Judgment the only thing mentioned will be the Human Good deeds performed by the unbeliever which will be found inadequate for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. **Rev 20:12-15**
  - iv. Therefore Human Good is always judged but not at the cross.
    - a. **The Angelic Conflict which is perpetuated throughout history therefore Human Good as an extension of and result of EVIL must continue as well being part of the failed plan and policy of Satan.**
  - v. Human good results from Evil thinking which is motivation for it and it is corrupting and destructive to individuals and nations including OURS and counter to the Plan of God.
10. Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul combats the Old Sin Nature **Ps 51:5-6**
- i. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul combats the Old Sin Nature.
  - ii. The reversionistic believer does not and cannot combat the Old Sin Nature **Heb 12:4**
    - a. This is true of all under the influence of evil as believers.
11. The Old Sin Nature is not found in the Resurrection Body of the believer and this is ultimate sanctification **1Cor 15:55-57**
- i. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ has provided the solution to the Old Sin Nature just as with everything else.

**Lesson #86      Series # 467      1Tim 5:24**

- I. Timothy is an epistle of application.
  - A. It takes all the doctrine from Hebrews to be able to make use of these applications.
    - 1. Human Relationships in the congregation
- II. Doctrine of Divine Discipline:
  - A. Definition:
    - 1. It is the sum total of punitive measures from God to correct and judge the believer in time.
      - i. It is for time only and the alternative to blessing and all believers are either under blessing or Divine Discipline.
    - 2. 2 Areas exist in Phase II of the Plan of God for the believer in time:
      - i. Discipline for Carnality
        - a. This is temporary canceled by rebound
      - ii. Discipline for reversionism being under the influence of evil.
        - a. This is permanent and terminates with the Sin Unto Death.
        - b. ONLY reversion recovery which takes many years can remove that Divine Discipline
    - 3. Divine Discipline never implies loss of salvation.

- i. A person can have a maximum of Divine Discipline for reversionism and influence from evil and have a totally miserable life and when he dies he is face to face with the lord.
    - ii. Divine Discipline is never an issue with regard to salvation
    - iii. Divine Discipline is an issue with regard to whether you are comfortable or not in life, whether you reach the point of glorification of God.
  4. Since there is no Divine Discipline in time all you get as a believer is what you get in this life.
    - i. God in fact keeps some believers alive just so they can receive their necessary Divine Discipline in time.
    - ii. God also keeps these types alive to test others and assist in testing the character of others so they can grow in the Spiritual Life and learn to apply Bible Doctrine.
  5. There are 2 reasons God keeps believers who are not reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace
    - i. To Spank that believer with the needed Divine Discipline.
    - ii. To test other believers.
    - iii. There is nothing more obnoxious than a believer under constant Divine Discipline and they live and are totally miserable so that we can get our training in the application of Bible Doctrine.
    - iv. These people are unhappy, frustrated and move from place to place and get around to from 500 to 1000 other believers to train them.
    - v. Many believers grow up because of these people and pastors are trained by them.
- B. The purpose of Divine Discipline in time is to CORRECT the believers direction.
  1. This is to bring him to rebound for his carnal failures or reversion recovery or BOTH!
  2. This brings the believer back into the Plan of God (the actual reason for the discipline to wake us up) in order that he might reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receive Super Grace blessings which glorify GOD in time.
    - i. The believer is NOT disciplined for the SIN ever since all sin has been judged in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
  3. The ability of God to bless you in the Cosmic Dynasphere not only glorifies Him but it is a tactical victory of the Angelic Conflict.
  4. His objective in keeping us alive in time is for blessing NOT for Divine Discipline which is only the alternative for those who reject Bible Doctrine and therefore the Plan of God.
- C. Principle of Divine Discipline: **Heb 12:5-6**
  1. We are born into the family of God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and once in the family of God always in his family.
    - i. God however must discipline his children to KEEP THEM IN LINE that is keep them in the Plan of God for their lives.
  2. There are 2 ways God manifests his love for you in time:
    - i. Blessing
    - ii. Divine Discipline
    - iii. Both manifest his love and desire to keep you in his plan.
    - iv. God is impartial and goes in whatever way is needed in YOUR particular case.
  3. Punitive action from God is for the believer only.
    - i. Divine Discipline is based on the Love of God for the believer plus we are his children and he is responsible for our training. **Prov 3:12**
  4. Therefore the principle of Divine Discipline is one we live with and experience as we get out of fellowship and into reversionism.
- D. The purpose of Divine Discipline **Rev 3:19**
  1. The believer under discipline is supposed to change his mind about Bible Doctrine and move to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- E. Divine Discipline does not imply loss of salvation **Gal 3:26**

1. As god's sons from our faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we always are in the family of God
  2. Being in the family of God and positionally in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we will reign with him but ONLY if we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace. **2Tim 2:11-13**
  3. If we deny Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ he will deny us blessing in time and special blessing and reward in eternity.
  4. Spiritual advance is from 0 as a new believer to 100 which is Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  5. When we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace we are then eligible to receive from God Super Grace blessings for time.
  6. These blessings include 5 categories of blessings:
    - i. Spiritual blessings
    - ii. Temporal Blessings
      - a. These are totally apart from the Cosmic Dynasphere and are in every conceivable type of prosperity.
    - iii. Association Blessings
    - iv. Historical Impact Blessing
    - v. Dying Blessing
      - a. This is transfer from life to eternity over the high golden bridge with maximum blessing ending life.
  7. The fact that we have these 5 categories of blessings in time is a guarantee we will have special maximum blessing and reward in eternity as surpassing grace which will honor Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ throughout eternity
    - i. The peons in time are believer who did not grow in the Spiritual Life but after death have the same Resurrection Body in heaven but they do not have the same blessings.
    - ii. While their blessings are great they cannot be compared to the rewards for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
  8. While heaven is a perfect place which goes on forever with maximum happiness it still has variation in rewards for the believer.
    - i. We can lose rewards for eternity and blessing in time.
    - ii. Just because we fail God he will never fail us, and it is incompatible with his character and insults his character.
  9. The person who thinks he can lose salvation because of something he does is totally blasphemous toward God, saying in effect that SOMETHING he does will cause God to cancel out his salvation.
    - i. The is accusing God of being a floor flusher or cheat but he keeps his word and our failures OR our successes cannot and DO not ever change the character of God.
    - ii. We cannot change God he can change us.
    - iii. We can be miserable and have hell on earth from Divine Discipline and be a miserable as HELL but we will never go to hell.
- F. Divine Discipline is confined to Time **Rev 21:4**
1. While we may fail in time repeatedly there is NO FAILURE in eternity and God comforts even the greatest of failures.
  2. There will be no Divine Discipline in eternity not even regret for our lack of decorations.
- G. Divine Discipline is designed to turn cursing into blessing.
1. We are made to hurt by God under Divine Discipline to teach us because we won't learn from Bible Doctrine or under positive volition the painless way so God teaches us the painful way.



2. There are 2 ways for God to teach you: **1Cor 11:30**
  - i. Painless == daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception
  - ii. Painful == Divine Discipline daily.
  - iii. We have a choice of learning under the Grace Apparatus for Perception with positive volition toward Bible Doctrine to grow up or under Divine Discipline to WAKE us up.
3. Divine Discipline is learning everything the hard way.
  - i. Divine Discipline includes Warning, Intensive and Dying Discipline.
  - ii. The principle here is if we judge ourselves by the rebound procedure then the Divine Discipline ends and the cursing becomes blessing.
  - iii. The pain may continue but it is converted from discipline to blessing by the rebound function.
  - iv. When we rebound the suffering of Divine Discipline can take 3 courses:
    - a. Removal totally
    - b. Continuing at the same level
    - c. Continuing at a lower level.
    - d. All 3 are for the purpose of blessing losing its punitive effect Job 5:17-18.
4. {El Shadai == El == masculine, Shadai == Feminine == meaning God has many breasts or many ways of providing for you in this life.}
  - i. Therefore the many breasted God can provide for you from blessing or from Divine Discipline.
  - ii. The CHOICE is OURS totally as members of the family of God.
  - iii. This is the Christian Way of Life which gives each of us OPTIONS.
  - iv. It is very simple and we can have a very happy wonderful unusual marvelous life we must choose for consistency in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
  - v. If we want a very miserable life then we simply reject Bible Doctrine and he will provide for us all kinds of Divine Discipline and misery and everything in life which will HURT us.
  - vi. When people get after people trying to hurt them they never can do it well BUT God being omniscient knows exactly how to hurt a person and still keep them alive.
  - vii. When you choose for Bible Doctrine you learn the painless way when you choose against Bible Doctrine and for Divine Discipline you will learn the painful way.
- H. Divine Discipline of reversionism includes Self Induced Misery **Ps 7:14-16**
  1. The road of self induced misery is the means of hurting self by one's own choices.
- I. Triple Compound Divine Discipline:
  1. Beginning with a Mental Attitude Sins and then direct this toward someone and add to it a verbal sin and malign or judge and when we judge another we Name sins of that person real or imagined and God has Divine Discipline for those sins.
  2. If the person you malign has really committed those sins then whatever Divine Discipline was ON THEM for it is transferred to you and they have no more Divine Discipline thus blessing by freedom from the Divine Discipline.
  3. If the person you malign has not committed those sins then they get double blessing while you get the Divine Discipline **Matt 7:2**
  4. In addition you get the Divine Discipline for the Mental Attitude and verbal Sins which started the whole thing in the first place
- J. There are 3 categories of Divine Discipline for reversionism:
  1. Warning **Rev 3:20**
  2. Intensive **Ps 7:14, 38:1-14**
  3. Dying **Rev 3:16, Jer 9:16, 44:12, Phil 3:18-19**
- K. These areas of Divine Discipline clarify our OPTIONS as members of the Royal Family of God.

- III. The category of believers and Pastor Teachers who are involved in not so obvious sins.
  - A. In this category of believers and Pastor Teachers The sins are hidden from the congregation.
    - 1. There are always people whom you contact who sin but whose sins are not obvious to us but who still surely sin.
    - 2. Every person is different and this Pastor Teacher is one who would lead you astray thinking some people are almost perfect.
  - B. He sins but the congregation is not aware of how he sins and they regard him as a PLASTER SAINT.
    - 1. These people or pastors are not perfect people as thought of by some.
  - C. The congregation first become aware of the carnality of the Pastor Teacher or other believer through is Divine Discipline from God.
  - D. His sins are obscure but his Divine Discipline is perspicuous.
  - E. The point is it does not make a difference whether we are cognizant or ignorant of another person's sins.
    - 1. God will still deal with them and we don't have to know anything about it before God goes into action with them.
    - 2. Some people feel it is there responsibility to reveal these sins to everyone when they have discovered them.
    - 3. The less you know about someone else's sins the better off you will be and whether you know about them or not GOD will still take care of the matter and he does not wait for you to find out.
  - F. You are not the judge or disciplinarian and your cognizance is not needed.
  - G. In the case of the Pastor Teacher he is directly responsible to God as we also are directly responsible ONLY to God never the congregation or anyone else.
  - H. Therefore the Pastor Teacher teaches you whether his sins are obvious or hidden.
    - 1. We all sin in some way and fail until the day we die.
    - 2. This is what occurs when we have the Old Sin Nature.
  - I. You learn Bible Doctrine from the Pastor Teacher whether you know his sins or NOT.
    - 1. God takes care of the Pastor Teacher and he gets double blessing or double Divine Discipline.
    - 2. When we try to add to his Divine Discipline we then get extra Divine Discipline.
- IV. The sins of some "follow after":
  - A. This is an evaluation of time for all believers especially Pastor Teachers.
    - 1. Our cognizance of another persons sins can only cause us to become involved in his Divine Discipline.
    - 2. We can be ignorant or cognizant of another persons sins.
    - 3. We can be STUPID or SMART about another persons sins.
    - 4. We are better off if we don't know and if it jumps up into your face your best action is to forget it since you have enough responsibility in this life for our own life decisions.
    - 5. Whether we know or not makes not difference because God will administer the Divine Discipline anyway and God does not wait for people to spread the word of this persons sins.
    - 6. Some people if they were as good at evangelism or witnessing as they are at gossiping the world would be evangelized many times over.
    - 7. Once you become aware of someone else's sins the best thing to do is stay out of it even if you are the object of those sins.
  - B. Once you know about another persons sins YOU are vulnerable to multiple discipline administration to YOU.
    - 1. Being aware of another persons sins make you vulnerable to gossip, maligning, saying "I TOLD YOU SO", etc all mean that you are in fact in for Divine Discipline yourself.
    - 2. Many sins of believers come from knowing about sins of other believers.
    - 3. It is far better to IGNORE the sins of others totally.

4. When a spouse sins against the opposite spouse and they complain about it they are in for Divine Discipline for the rest of their life being stupid about these things.
  5. We will meet people everywhere and when we become aware with their sins the tendency is to take that information and pass it on to everyone we know and this always brings Double Divine Discipline.
- C. If you know about others sins then we are better off to forget them and demonstrate greater character when we forget the whole thing.
- D. This principle applies to all members of the Royal Family of God.
- E. The evaluation deals with carnality in time having nothing to do with eternity.
- F. While the category mentioned here is Pastor Teacher the application is for everyone in the Royal Family of God.
1. This is good since some people have a tendency to IDOLIZE these Pastor Teachers.
  2. The sooner you figure out that everyone is a sinner and not knowing about them is better than knowing and God knows even if you don't you will be 1000% better off.
- G. When sins and failures of others especially pastors are well know this requires patience and Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and application of Bible Doctrine correctly.
1. Our thinking should always be "If I can figure out his sins then God being omniscient surely knows about them therefore I should leave it to God"
  2. The fact is that God knew in **Eternity Past** about all our sins and **NO ONE EVER FOOLS GOD**.
- H. The concern of the congregation should never be over someone else's sin especially **NOT** over the sins of the Pastor Teacher but their **ONLY** concern must be with regard to the content of his **MESSAGE** that it reflects study, exegesis, analysis, interpretation and application.
1. The exception is parents over children, management over labor, officers over enlisted men.
  2. This is a fine hypocrisy we can enter into.
- I. The congregation must concentrate on the message **NEVER ON THE PERSON**.
1. No believer can have capacity for life and have his eyes on people These are mutually exclusive.
  2. To the extent we get our eyes on people to that extent we lack capacity for life.
  3. In this condition we cannot enjoy anything in life and the older we get with eyes on other people the **WORSE** we become and become **ONLY** a training ground for growing believers.
  4. It is impossible to be blessed in life and have capacity for life in many categories and at the same time have eyes on people.
- V. The good deeds of the Pastor Teacher:
- A. When we encounter our right Pastor Teacher casually we never have to comment on the value of his messages and complements mean nothing to the Pastor Teacher who is focused on his ministry of studying and teaching.
1. If we think it was a good message we probably are not learning much from it.
  2. Any message where by you learn Bible Doctrine and doctrine is brought together or rips you apart is a **GOOD MESSAGE**.
  3. A Good message is one which causes you to grow up, wake up, move out and keep moving toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  4. There will be many reactions and many responses to any given messages **JUST KEEP LEARNING**.
- B. Production by any believer or Pastor Teacher is made obvious by spiritual growth.
1. When believers start to grow in the Spiritual Life then it is obvious that the ministry which they are under is having its positive effect.
- C. Principles:

1. The evaluation of the ministry of any Pastor Teacher is god's responsibility and it is our benefit and his responsibility.
  - i. We are to benefit from spiritual growth but evaluation is NOT your responsibility.
  - ii. Concentration is our responsibility.
2. The congregation should therefore avoid judging or maligning a Pastor Teacher.
3. This is an attack on the sovereignty of God and his prerogative to evaluate his OWN SLAVES the Pastor Teachers.
4. Do not get out of fellowship by confusing the man with the message.
5. Objectivity concentrates on the message subjectivity focus' on the person.
6. The Pastor Teacher is a sinner but we learn from sinners.
7. God has provided the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher and the means of his being able to provide for us Bible Doctrine.
  - i. He does the providing of Bible Doctrine we must to the concentrating and learning and everyone grows in the Spiritual Life and avoids any problems.

**1Tim 5:24**

v24: The sins of certain humans, especially Pastor Teachers including Timothy or even you and I, are obvious, prominent, conspicuous, preceding or leading him to Divine Discipline Judgment, on the other hand with regard to another category of Pastor Teachers they follow after.

**1Tim 5:25**

v25: In the same manner also their noble production (is) obvious and those deeds or productions which are otherwise cannot or is not able to be concealed from God.

**Lesson #87                      Series # 467                      1Tim 6:1**

- I. Freedom through Military Victory
  - A. Phinnis D. McCleary, Plt Sgt, US Army, A Company, 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion, 6<sup>th</sup> US Infantry, From San Angelo, Vietnam 14 May 1968.
  - B. William L. Mcgonagle, Cpt US Navy, USS Liberty, 8-9 June 1967 Eastern Med, From Kansas
- II. Business and Economic Distortions in the United States Economy.
  - A. Between the federal government, labor unions, bureaucratic regulations, federal reserve interference in banking, many things could cause the state of our economy to self destruct at any time since the late 60's.
    1. This is the disaster of trying to make a living in business since that time.
    2. Industry has been since then maltreated and over regulated and taxed when it should never be taxed.
- III. Timothy, chapter 6 is dedicated to businessmen who fight daily to keep businesses afloat and prevent failure.
  - A. Since the 70's there has been great difficulty in making businesses successful and a myriad of mechanisms to cause failure.
    1. Integrity of business men is and has been so low and the lying, cheating and back stabbing is beyond imagination.
    2. Added to this all the governmental interference and the situation is beyond imagination in its potential for failure.
  - B. However no matter the time or situation a businessman who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Super Grace is still able to make a fortune even in the worst times with greatest possible difficulties.
    1. There is not anything a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace cannot do and the only limitation in his successes and prosperity is found in Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
    2. Every blessing we have ever had and is wonderful in our life is courtesy of the lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
    3. Whether business, house wife functions, military, education, professions, we must never start thinking we earn or deserve the success we have and blessing we have.

4. We must never lose track of the fact that everything we have and possess is courtesy of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and we can lose it in a Second since he gave it all and could take it all away.
  5. We all must concentrate on this principle of Grace as the means and God as the source of all which we have in this life.
- C. he application of Bible Doctrine is second only to LEARNING Bible Doctrine.
1. We must learn to learn Bible Doctrine and we must also LEARN to apply Bible Doctrine.
  2. We should always be in the process of learning some Bible Doctrine and also in the process of learning some way to apply Bible Doctrine.
  3. The opportunities for application of Bible Doctrine have never been greater than at this time in the history of the United States of America far greater than they were when this class was given in 1976.
  4. About the only thing we really have not lost to any degree is the freedom to study Bible Doctrine on a daily basis.
- D. Business originated a few moments after the initial fall of Adam and Ishah **Gen 3:17-19**
1. Adam has just sinned and had a choice between Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the garden and the woman outside of the garden.

**Gen 3:17 (Judgment of the MAN)**

v17: Then To Adam he pronounced judgment, **“Because YOU have listened to and obeyed the false authority of your wife, your Right Woman, (Ishah) and because you have eaten the fruit of the tree which I command you should not to eat from it, Now CONSTANTLY and CONTINUALLY BEING CURSED is the Ground because of you, in sorrow or suffering you will earn a living and eat from it, ALL THE DAYS OF YOUR LIFE,**

v18: **Both thorns and thistles or cactus the ground will grow for you (curse of nature), and you shall eat the plants of the field for food, and engage in intensive mental planning**

**Gen 3:19**

v19: **And by the sweat of your face in both physical and mental labor you shall eat food and make a living until your body returns to the ground (die), because from it, the ground, you were taken and you are dust, and to dust you shall return.**

2. Satan did not tangle with Adam since Adam was too smart for his deception and would have told him where to shove it.
  - i. Satan picked a VAIN, STUPID WOMAN, She was stupid in that her vanity made her weak.
  - ii. She could not apply Bible Doctrine and spent too much time distracted during her bible lesson time.
3. As a result of this Adam now discovers he must now enter the business world and it is Satan's rulership of this world and of business in general under which he must function.
4. Instead of controlling the situation with Ishah Adam listened to her and obeyed her false authority.
5. Adam had double authority over the woman, he was RULER of the world and her Right Man and she despite this did not care for his position.
6. As ruler of the world Adam should have had the RESPECT of the woman and Adam as the Right Man of Ishah should have had respect from the woman.
7. Adam did not have respect from the woman since she had LOST capacity for Love because of indifference to Bible Doctrine as taught by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the garden.
8. Adam therefore came under the influence of the WOMAN even when he should have been influencing her.
9. Adam looked at the first sinner and recognized the issue and made his decision to FOLLOW her instead of leading her.
10. He rejected his only authority Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the garden and stepped out of the garden as it were to be with the woman.
11. He should have chosen the authority of God but instead he recognized and followed the authority of the woman only.

12. When a WOMAN is put in charge of any man there is always TROUBLE.
  13. Adam DELIBERATELY obeyed the woman and disobeyed God.
  14. By subordinating himself to a creature over whom he had authority, he LOST dominion over the world, his status of innocence, and also became spiritually dead as he ate the fruit of the forbidden fruit.
  15. He listened to and obeyed the VOICE of his wife and by now she was giving commands even though there was no one to obey.
- E. The lord makes the issue clear to both man and woman and the sin of Adam's disobedience is mentioned but the woman's part in the fall was not ever mentioned.
1. The woman sinned as well and was therefore spiritually dead and ADAM saw the first spiritually dead person and chose her over the lord having succumbed to her charms.
  2. The lord states in the phrase "being cursed" that business will never be easy for the man and the woman is to stay home and have and rear children and the man is to go into the business world and WORK.
  3. Business is under a curse always has been and always will be under a curse.
  4. Business is legitimate and a way by which you make a living and it is free enterprise authorized under the Laws of Divine Establishment BUT it is always under a curse because the people with which you do business all have an Old Sin Nature as do YOU.
  5. Because everyone in business has an Old Sin Nature it will always be cursed and even in the best of times business is never really easy and it is always uncertain and there are many pitfalls and dangers and problems of Mental Attitude Sins and verbal sins and overt sins as well.
  6. There is interference from government and problems with labor and of almost every kind of problem.
- F. We must understand that from the very start even though business is legitimate and very important in life it is STILL under a curse.
1. This is related to the principle that everything we do in life is related to someone who is a sinner.
  2. Therefore the whole world is under a curse since we all have an Old Sin Nature.
  3. Therefore it is not surprising that the first thing said about BUSINESS is that it is under a curse.
  4. The first business endeavor was agriculture and it started under a curse and this curse will be removed under the millennial reign of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ **Rom 8:19-22, Is 35.**
  5. Man lost his domination over animals and the world and he lost about everything and finds himself required to engage in business and it is cursed and Satan is ruler of the world and man is cursed with an Old Sin Nature and thus business is going to be difficult at best.
- G. "In sorrow you will eat" is telling us that BUSINESS is an area of GREAT suffering in life and always has been.
1. It is a great area for disappointment and frustration and temptation and it is fraught with every kind of LUST problem.
  2. Everything which could cause difficulty in life and which could make you miserable is found in business.
  3. You don't have to be hooked up with a woman to have suffering just be in business and being in business and hooked up with a woman compounds the problems and having a woman running a business and being involved in that business in some way and also hooked up with a woman makes the problems in your life exponentially greater.
  4. There is no place to go nor any thing to become involved in in life whereby we can escape the cursing and difficulty BUT Our objective in life is NOT to escape it but to be BLESSED by GOD IN IT.

5. Business is under a curse but the principle is that GRACE always turns cursing into blessing.
6. Man from Adam and Ishah had to earn a living and that means that there will be SORROW and MISERY and SUFFERING and when he eats it is because he has earned a living.
7. This is the first principle of economics and business under the Laws of Divine Establishment but God also makes a promise when he says "YOU SHALL EAT".
8. This means that in sorrow and with difficulty you will earn a living and eat, ALL OF YOUR LIFE, it is an unending curse and for Adam who will live a very long time after the fall this is a lot of suffering.
  - i. This passage has other connotations and especially shows that the "wages if sin" is NOT physical death.

H. There has been and will be all sorts of opposition in business seen in the phrase "Thorns and Thistles".

1. You will be stuck with many kinds of adversity in life and therefore in business and life in general there is a great deal of trouble and antagonism in life.

I. "in the sweat of your face" refers to both physical and mental labor in life

1. Both are involved in the business world
2. The curse involved making a living and to eat food FOR ALL THE DAYS OF YOUR LIFE.
3. The idea of retiring is the worst thing a person can do and if he does not have other interests or avocations or enthusiasms in life to occupy his time he will die shortly after retiring since he will have ceased to LIVE.
4. Retiring means that most people no longer have anything to life for and he begins to miss all the activities involved with is former work.
5. Therefore man is meant to work until he dies.
6. People never die from hard work, most people die from boredom and lack of enthusiasm, from atrophy, no mental nor physical work, and many people are dead while they are still breathing.

J. Man vs Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ

1. The ground was cursed with thorns and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was cursed having worn a crown of thorns.
2. Man Works mentally and physically producing sweat on the face while Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ sweat great drops of blood on the cross.
3. Man returns to the dust while Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is brought back from the dust in resurrection.
4. Man by an act of disobedience dies spiritually while Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ being judged for our sins died spiritually.
5. Man dies twice, in spiritual and then physical death as did Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.

IV. The World of Business, 1Tim 6

A. Business is part of the Laws of Divine Establishment

1. those which deal with the economy.

B. The principle of Business is the antithesis of the principle of grace

1. You work for a living and do nothing under the principle of Grace.

C. Therefore we operate under 2 systems, Grace and hard work.

1. These are not contradictory they only become so to the ignorant believer.
2. The only time there is conflict between Business and Grace is when the believer is stupid, ignorant of Bible Doctrine, reversionistic, and functioning under the influence of evil.

D. In business you must work to produce in GRACE you cannot work to receive divine blessing neither in Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Surpassing Grace Status Quo.

- E. The function of the believer in business is found in many passages:
1. Royal Family of God in business, Eph 6:5-9, Col 3:22-4:1, 1Tim 6
- F. It is part of the Plan of God for all believers in the Royal Family of God to represent the lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the business world in time.
1. The most idiotic thing among Christians is to be reading their bible on the job and sometimes even witnessing on the job is wrong.
  2. There is a proper time for everything and when a job requires any level of concentration and most do then you are out of line to be talking about the lord and not concentrating on the job.
  3. It is out of line to read your bible on company time and distract others with witnessing to them when they should be as you should be concentrating on the job you are doing.
  4. When you are working on the job Bible Doctrine demands that the christian laborer concentrate on the job and make it an efficient repetition of actions.
  5. When you are working on the job and it is a MENTAL type of job then you are to concentrate all your mental focus on the job.
  6. YOU OWE THAT TIME TO THE EMPLOYER WHETHER YOU ARE UNDER OR OVER PAID.
  7. Soldiers in war are to KILL or be KILLED and the more he kills the more he HONORS THE LORD.
  8. In labor and industry the same is true and the harder you work the more you glorify the lord.
  9. You do your job and be the best, most faithful and hardest worker there.
  10. Everyone is exposed to and functions under business and we are blessed by business as we have seen in the past of this nation where free enterprise functions have blessed this nation greatly.
  11. Industry was the driving force behind our victory in WWII.
  12. We should all love business and business is a principle of Bible Doctrine and though there may be many horrible things in business and those which make people miserable it is part of the Plan of God for believers to represent God in business.
  13. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ prayed for business and businessmen **John 17:15-17**

**John 17:15-17**

**v15: I do not ask you to take them out of the world, keep them around and get them into business and jobs, but that you guard them from the evil one, Satan ruler of this world.**

**v16: They, Royal Family of God, are not from the world, even as I am not from the world.**

**v17: Sanctify or set apart them in business and jobs by means of doctrine your word is doctrine.**

14. No one could ever last in business as a believer without Bible Doctrine and enjoy the challenges, difficulties and possibilities for it is a phenomenal challenge and all free enterprise systems present the most marvelous challenges.
  15. Our system of government as written in the constitution gives all men poor or rich the chance to make it from extreme poverty to extreme wealth in 1 generation or even 20 to 30 years.
  16. This is the challenge of free enterprise.
  17. It is doctrine which can make this possible for believers and the more you take in the more you will succeed in business and it will change your integrity so that you can go out into business and face it and GOD will honor and bless you in spite of all opposition from the devil.
- G. God has a plan for the believer in the business world.
1. He does not tell you to leave the business world and enter the ministry.
  2. The person in the business world is just as much in full time christian service as the Pastor Teacher.
  3. For every man who has a gift of Pastor Teacher and is going to the pulpit it takes thousands to get into business and function there properly.



4. This plan calls for believers to be blessed in the business world.
- H. The Plan of God calls for the believer to not only be in the business world but to be fortified with Bible Doctrine while in the business world and this makes that believer a very definite part of the Angelic Conflict.
  1. Don't ever kid yourself you are just as important in the business world as any other of us in the Royal Family of God.
- I. Outline of **1Tim 6**
  1. The business world is divided into 2 categories so the 3 points of the outline cover this.
  2. v1-8 == Labor
  3. v9-19 == Management
  4. v20-21 == closing exhortation to Timothy.
- V. Labor in Relationship with management;
  - A. v1 is for anyone who is in business or industry with someone over you who is an unbeliever
  - B. v2 is for anyone in this situation who has a believer supervising them.
    1. The laborer should do a better job working for the believer than the unbeliever and it is more difficult for the believer to work for a believer than for an Unbeliever.
  - C. The bible must be interpreted in the time in which it was written always:
    1. Tim was written about AD 66 the first 100 years of the roman empire and at this time slavery was one of the chief sources of labor and the reason why slavery was the source of labor was due to the labor unions pricing themselves OUT OF THE MARKET.
    2. There was a strong labor union movement which began at the time of the 2<sup>nd</sup> Punic war and it reached such a peak that it was impossible for industry to keep going with labor from the unions.
    3. Over the period of about 200 years the unions got very strong and learned how to strike the tie up business and as a result many of the industries LEFT ROME and ITALY and moved to the provinces where they could find cheap labor as in North Africa, Greece, Spain, Southern France Etc.
    4. The problem was that taxes caught them in the provinces so that unions at home and taxes abroad caused industry to look for a labor market and since the Romans constantly were at war and conquering people so that the prisoners of war were therefore put into industry as slaves.
    5. In Rome most slaves were white and very few of the black or Yellow races and NO Indians.
    6. This was very cheap labor and the unions were directly responsible for the continuation of slavery in Rome and they priced themselves out of the market and with their strikes caused industry to go to slave labor.
    7. This meant that there was a phenomenal amount of slavery in Rome but it was designed with only a low labor market in mind and they were paid.
    8. These slaves did have some freedom and many of the believers who attended local churches were slaves with freedom of the local town.
    9. Therefore the person who was a slave was in fact a laborer and by application this passage refers to those who work for unbeliever management under the category of labor.
    10. Slavery was in many ways a social evil but Paul never condemned it nor sought to rectify it and the focus remained on Bible Doctrine.
    11. Paul's approach was that of a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Ultra Super Grace not a bleeding heart liberal or reversionist under the influence of evil.
    12. There are far greater issues in the Spiritual Life than slavery such as Salvation by Grace and Growth in the Spiritual Life by Grace and blessings for those who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Dying grace and surpassing grace for eternity.
    13. The Angelic Conflict is far more important than the social Status Quo of the believer in the world of Satan.

14. Once you are a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ you belong to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and therefore need not be concerned about your Status Quo in life.
  15. Your major concern must be Bible Doctrine the written word and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the living word.
  16. Slaves in Rome had a great deal of freedom with normal working hours and time to attend the local church and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  17. It is important to realize that slavery never has hindered spiritual growth nor evangelism in Rome or any where else there is or was positive volition.
- D. Without authority in business there can be NO success and without success there cannot be continued prosperity and without prosperity there cannot be jobs and without jobs there will eventually be depression.
1. No economy can survive the loss of authority and there must be a good labor market but this labor must recognize the principle of authority.
  2. This is true for industry and the military and professions and the economy of any nation depends on Authority in Business, Military, Government, Education, and the home and family and marriage.
  3. The Royal Family of God in labor is under the principle of authority and we cannot evade authority in life and have any blessing.
  4. The Royal Family of God under authority must do their jobs as unto the lord.
  5. Authority in the industrial complex is management.
  6. The believer has a JOB or profession which is his full time christian service under the policy and payment of management.
  7. Part of the function of the job is obedience to the authority of the management and policy of the company he works for.
  8. Where you draw pay you must have loyalty, obedience and respect for the authority of the organization and no believer has integrity when he is constantly criticizing management behind their backs.
  9. You destroy self when you run down the boss and cheat on management and sneak and gold brick and have any lack of integrity.
  10. You may get away with it and still draw your pay for a long time but you are destroying a part of your soul that will hinder your Spiritual Life, your INTEGRITY.
  11. Being a christian does not give one an excuse to lack integrity in labor and if you don't like the job then just quit but don't cheat or retain a lousy attitude.
  12. Economic prosperity and effectiveness in the industrial complex demands national freedom and individual respect for authority and management who are to set policy and represent investors who inject capital into industry and are the ones who have the ONLY right to set policy in business.
  13. Bad management and poor policy is NO EXCUSE for the believer rejecting authority in business and when as a believer you work for someone else that person is your authority.

**Lesson #88      Series # 467      1Tim 6:1**

- I. Business continued:
  - A. The military establishment is the basis for all freedom and the Industrial establishment is the basis for all prosperity in any nation.
    1. There has never been a more difficult time to be engaged in business than in the United States of America today.
    2. Even in the most extreme economic depressions so long as the federal government is not interfering and labor unions do not constantly try to usurp management authority and have a strangle hold on a nation one can always recover as an individual in business and industry can bounce back and produce again the prosperity of the past for the nation.
    3. It is and has been for a very long time cut throat situation in business when PSEUDO LAW is against you and labor unions tie up industry and there is a sloppy Mental Attitude

- in the nation and apostasy and greater dishonesty and loss of integrity, it is very difficult to function in business.
4. God has found a way apart from the situation of business today to cause the individual believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to succeed.
- B. V1-8 is directed toward all believers who are under the authority of someone in business.
1. V1 == Royal Family of God under Royal Family of God management
  2. v2 == Royal Family of God under the Unbeliever in management.
- C. Slavery in the ancient world of Rome was the same as Labor in industry today.
1. Ultimately labor unions in Rome almost destroyed totally the prosperity of Rome except for the influx of slaves from foreign conquests
  2. The labor unions had degraded the industrial situation of Rome (as they are doing today in the United States of America) so far that the principle was that it was far better to exist in slavery (they did have great freedom then) and security as a slave than to starve to death as a free man.
  3. Very few ever tried to flee as slaves and few wanted to.
- D. There must be authority for every function of life.
1. Your capacity for life is related to self imposed authority from your own soul.
  2. With self discipline a person imposes authority and a system of discipline on self which gives capacity to enjoy life and receive blessing.
  3. To achieve any success in any area there must be a structure of authority.
- E. The economy of any nation depends on authority in business, government, military, **Law Enforcement**, the home, education etc.
1. Authority in business is called management
  2. Believers in labor have a job which is his full time service as a christian and he must continue to do the job as unto the LORD
  3. Both economic prosperity and his effectiveness in the industrial complex demand his individual freedom and respect for authority and management.
    - i. Management makes policy and is the key to business and industry.
- F. Management in Business:
1. Despotism == (tl) Despot, despotism, etc == fem noun == tyrant == one with absolute authority== management or capitalists who invest in business.
  2. Those who create and establish the business make policy for the business.
  3. Labor has no right except to do their job working under the policy and function to carry out policy NEVER to make policy.
  4. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment the management who run the business and capitalists who set up the business have the ONLY rights as to how the business is run.
  5. Neither the federal government nor labor have no right to interfere in business nor to interfere in your privacy.
  6. If you are employed by a business you have no right to try to establish or set policy this is EVIL.
  7. Once government or labor unions destroy the economy and labor markets no longer functions the only way industry can keep going is to move to slavery or the equivalent of a slave market.
  8. This is why many aspects of industry have moved into Mexico where they bus labor into the plants for a days work.
  9. In the United States of America it is more comfortable for industry to function where there are right to work laws and labor unions cannot control industry.
  10. Many gun manufacturing companies have moved for better labor markets to JAPAN.
  11. Today Mr. Trump is working hard to reverse this situation.
- G. Management can be dishonest and there are some situations where policy is bad but this does not change the fact that a believer in labor still must do his job as unto the lord.

1. Neither government nor labor have any right to make or influence policy of a business under the Laws of Divine Establishment.
2. The trend of business in the United States of America for many decades has been tragic with government bureaucratic regulation, evil corporate tax laws, labor union strangle holds on business of every sort.
3. Government policies and laws put into effect are insanity and result from sincere evil congressmen.
  - i. These men pass laws with the idea of saving the lives of some people and then when the laws are passed the congress sets up an administrative agency to enforce the laws but these agencies set up without any oversight interpret the laws to suit what they want.
  - ii. They often have people interpreting who have been hired under nepotism and have no ability to interpret anything but they become power mad having more power than even the president.
  - iii. They then go to industries and shut them down unless they try to clean up some aspect of their production or change some system.
4. While this happens and this power is being thrown about industry and the individual consumer are the only one's hurt by their power lust.
5. There are many jobs today set up in the government bureaucratic system where they tell industry what they can and cannot do by people who are idiots and should be in playpens.
6. Our government is in the business of blackmail of state governments and industry for compliance with safety rules, environmental rules and in the past speed limit rules or funding would be withdrawn.
  - i. We see the idiocy of this today when in the 80's they blackmailed the states with federal money being withheld unless highway speed limits were reduced to 55 mph; Today the secondary highways have a 65 mph limit and the interstates have a 75 mph limit.
  - ii. The same goes for industry where they forced automobile makers to institute CO and CO<sub>2</sub> emissions controls which resulted in SO<sub>2</sub> emissions which caused worse air qualities than anything before them.
7. These things are destroying the free enterprise system which was the source of our prosperity and the United States of America has been the most prosperous nation in history second only to Rome.
8. A nation can gain great prosperity but if the people in general forget the source and principles on which the prosperity was base they ALWAYS LOSE their prosperity and in fact everything else.
9. We have lived under pseudo prosperity for many decades and the attitude in government was to simply flood the market with more dollars even though they don't represent anything in the nation.
10. This is like playing monopoly and one day the whole system will collapse and Mr. Trump is trying to correct this situation and bring industry and jobs back to the United States of America but we are suffering under an incredible national debt which is in fact impossible to repay.
  - i. (ff) 1,000,000,000,000 dollars is not a fathomable amount of money.
  - ii. If you have a business which you run poorly and you started when Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was born but lost 1,000,000 dollars per day.
  - iii. This would be over the period of approximately 737,665 days losing 1,000,000 per day you would have lost 737,665,000,000 dollars that is 737 billion 665 million dollars.
  - iv. You would have 262.335,000,000 dollars left to lose today.
  - v. That is you would have 718.73 years left to finish losing that one (1) trillion dollars and our national debt in a CONSERVATIVE ESTIMATE IS over 21

trillion dollars and by some estimates considering the government payouts in welfare and other government grants and programs nearer to 200 trillion. (ff)

11. The fact is that a couple of vigorous generations can carry the morons in about 5 generations before the whole system begins to self destruct.
  - i. Eventually if the morons persist the whole system will be destroyed.
- H. No respect for authority lack of manners and no poise in labor is the greatest problem and if believers do not have these attributes they certainly will not overflow to the unbelievers.
  1. Today in 2018 we have the absolute MOST sorry group of people in labor today with total lack of integrity, skill, dedication and of all things which count in business and make for great prosperity are totally missing.
- I. Regardless of how bad people in management are they are to be regarded as being worthy of ALL HONOR.
  1. Regardless of personal feelings or conflicts or difficulties with management you are to concentrate on these people being WORTHY of HONOR.
  2. The Mental Attitude of the believer must be when they go to work each day is that their management is worthy of all honor.
  3. We are NOT entitled to an opinion but to do our job as unto the lord and have no right to gripe about anything.
  4. We have a right to QUIT or STAY in that job but have no right to stir up trouble, raise a fuss, to badmouth the boss or manager.
  5. If you cannot go to work with a good Mental Attitude there is something wrong with your Spiritual Life no matter who bad the situation is or may be.
  6. If you cannot do this you are either retrogressing into reversions or have not learned how to apply Bible Doctrine.
  7. If you gripe and moan and complain about your job then your Mental Attitude is BAD and this overflows into every aspect of your life
    - i. Social life is bad
    - ii. You are losing integrity
    - iii. You come under the influence of many varied Mental Attitude Sins and your opinions are not worth listening to at all.
  8. Mental Attitude is extremely important and if it is bad on an 8 hour job it will be bad in every aspect of life.
    - i. If you go to work with a bad Mental Attitude then you have no capacity for life.
    - ii. A Bad or unfair boss is not the issue YOU are the issue and you must be under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in order to function properly in business.
    - iii. The job does not matter and how monotonous or difficult it may be is unimportant and YOU DO NOT HAVE A RIGHT TO A BAD Mental Attitude for any reason.
- J. A distortion of a principle does not negate nor change the principle.
  1. Violation of the principle by party of the 1<sup>st</sup> part does not give an excuse to violate the principle as party of the 2<sup>nd</sup> part.
  2. Management is the authority and may fail and distort policy but labor has no right to distort in reaction to it.
  3. When you change your Mental Attitude from good to bad it flows into every aspect of your life and you cannot shut down a bad Mental Attitude when the job is over for the day.
  4. You will still carry with you your bad Mental Attitude and complain to all whom will listen to you.
  5. When you have a bad Mental Attitude you have something wrong in your soul and you will carry this into ever aspect of life.
  6. Your social life will be ONE LONG SERIES of complaints and NO ONE ever likes to be around one who constantly complains.

7. "worth of honor" is a Mental Attitude of honor and integrity and sinful man often distorts divine principles but this does change nor rescind the principle which is not rescinded because it is abused.
  - i. This often occurs in human functions when human established laws are distorted they then are either rescinded or weakened to the point of being ineffectual.
  - ii. No matter how badly a principle is abused the principle is never changed.
- K. 1Tim 5:17 shows us DOUBLE HONOR directed toward the Pastor Teacher in the local church.
  1. "All honor" is the same principle applied to a different area of authority.
  2. This is the attitude of labor toward management
  3. Labor does not pay management and there is no remuneration of double honor.
  4. Management always pays labor and all prosperity goes back to the total of its management and their function in the industrial complex.

## II. Authority:

- A. Definition:
  1. Authority is LEGAL power delegated by God to the Human Race.
    - i. The sum total of all legal power delegated by God to the Human Race is summarized in the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  2. Establishment itself represents the principle of authorized authority.
  3. Establishment means that certain members of the Human Race have received from God jurisdiction and responsibility for others in the Human Race.
  4. This extends in both temporal and spiritual realms
    - i. In the temporal realm it is the establishment
    - ii. In the spiritual realm it is the local church
- B. Authority has been an issue since the beginning of the Human Race and the fall of Ishah and Adam is a demonstration of rejection of authority in the Human Race.
  1. Ishah rejected the authority of Adam, Doctrine and God and accepted the authority of Satan under his principles and policy of evil.
    - i. She was in doing this deceived into the first sin in the Human Race eating of the forbidden tree.
  2. Adam who had delegated authority from God over the woman also ate of the fruit taking it from the woman and throwing away his authority and accepting the authority of the woman which is not authorized in the hr.
  3. Authority was the issue of both the man and woman at the fall.
  4. The fall of man is directly related to his rejection of authority.
- C. It is obvious that history is perpetuated by the continuance and perpetuation of the principle of authority.
  1. Direct authority of God revealed through Bible Doctrine.
  2. Authority related to communication of Bible Doctrine in a local church, the Pastor Teacher and limited authority of Deacons
  3. Life has authority seen in the Divine Institutions which include:
    - i. #1 -- Volition of free will and every advance and mistake of our life is related to decisions which a part of respect for our own authority in our own soul.
    - ii. #2 -- Marriage has husband having authority over wife
    - iii. #3 -- Parents have authority over children
    - iv. #4 -- Government has authority over citizens.
  4. Academic Authority in every level there are 2 categories of authority:
    - i. The policy system of authority carried out by the administration whose responsibility to carry out the policy having authority to do so.
    - ii. The Teacher in the classroom has the authority for the time in that class.
    - iii. The responsibility of the student is concentration, poise, manners etc and whether you agree or not with the subject being taught you are only responsible to concentrate on it.

- a. One of the most important maturing aspect of growing up in life is your ability to exercise poise and manners and sit still in a classroom when you do not agree with what is being presented.
    - b. Parents have no right to support children who oppose or resist what is being taught in a class and students have no right to disrupt a class when something is taught which is wrong or not agreed with.
    - c. Authority is authority and the children have no right to run wild in a class.
  - iv. Parents complain and cause teachers to lose authority and then the kids run the class and nothing is learned.
  - v. Once a person enters a school or other organization the responsibility is to stick with whatever policy they have established there or LEAVE and if they cannot there is something wrong with that person's integrity, character or Spiritual Life.
  - vi. Whether they are spiritual issues or not is of no consequence for if you enter an organization or educational system YOU ARE RESPONSIBLE TO ABIDE BY THEIR POLICIES because they have the authority.
  - vii. The opinion of a student or any person for that matter, is worth nothing to anyone unless their opinion is requested and if it is NOT requested they should simply keep their MOUTH SHUT.
  - viii. While we may value our own opinion it is not necessarily the view of the rest of the world that they value your opinion.
  - ix. Even with good judgment we must never assume from blind arrogance that our opinion matters for any reason.
5. In academics our system is bad not just because our content is bad but more so the POOR use of or LACK of authority and total permissiveness and allowing children to express them selves in a class.
- i. You cannot and do not learn by expressing yourself but by concentrating and listening.
  - ii. The idea that you repress personalities and do damage and bring on subjectivity by not allowing freedom of expression and the attitude of the nation has been distorted for a very long time so that people have opinions but NO Scale of Values.
  - iii. We need administration in schools who will back teachers and teachers who are TOUGH and when a student complains about something in a class THROW HIM OUT.
6. This is the same thing in athletics where the coach is the authority not the parents nor the players.
- i. Authority must be learned in athletics and especially in professional athletics where there is NO authority or discipline but a LOT OF MONEY.
7. In the military when the principle of authority is violated it means loss of life and national freedom.
8. In business when authority is violated or distorted it will fail and destroy prosperity.
- i. Labor unions and government bureaucratic regulations are a slap in the face of business.
  - ii. We need totally free enterprise functions for business and industry and this is what will bring things to the top in industry.
  - iii. A person should be able to go from total poverty to a millionaire during his life but not in our system any longer.
  - iv. Labor unions constantly interfere with workers to force them into working less and loafing more (have had many personal experiences like this) and the people in unions are all bums and should all be fired.

9. God's authority over nature with divine laws and over creatures under his sovereignty and over angels and in the human realm and these things are extremely important to our life in the Royal Family of God and Church Age.
- D. When you work for someone else you are classified as LABOR and your JOB is your full time christian service.
1. What you do for a living and draw a salary for is your full time christian service and you must do it as unto the lord and there must be respect for management.
  2. If they are incompetent or abusive that is not our problem but our problem is to continue to do our job as unto the lord.
  3. Our capacity for life comes from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the more Bible Doctrine in the soul the more likely we will fulfill these principles as a part of capacity for life and function of our royal priesthood.
  4. A believers job and skill are not just part of his livelihood but part of his Spiritual Life function.
  5. When you go to work to a job with a bad Mental Attitude you are maligning God's character and Bible Doctrine.
- E. Principles:
1. Every believer should do his job as if Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was your boss, manager, foreman, authority in your company, for in effect HE IS.
  2. No matter how menial the job it should be done with maximum efficiency as unto the lord.
  3. Management may not always be around to supervise but the Lord sees you every minute.  
**Heb 4:13**

#### 1Tim 6:1

v1: As many (believers) as are continually working under the yoke with others together under the authority of another in management as labor or slaves in business or industry must continually consider or regard in their Mental Attitude, their own masters or management and investors as worthy of all honor, in order that, for the purpose that, the name or person of the God and Bible Doctrine may not be blasphemed, maligned slandered or defamed.

#### Lesson #89 Series # 467 1Tim 6:1

- I. The United States of America Today:
  - A. No nation can survive without a clear delineation of the Laws of Divine Establishment
    1. These MUST be perpetuated from one generation to another from soul to soul.
    2. The soul carries the real person and our capacity for life.
  - B. All freedom to a national entity comes from the military and NO NATION EVER survives the degradation and destruction of its military.
    1. Since the industrial revolution and long before that even in the ancient world, no nation can have prosperity apart from free enterprise in the industrial complex.
    2. Therefore the combination of a strong military and strong industrial growth under free enterprise system is the basis for all national prosperity.
    3. See the History of China where they have large manpower strong military and large area or distances; they never had a great industrial complex until recently.
    4. China has been a raw material area not an industrial area.
    5. This results in the same problem
    6. There are enough people to have as large military but not a strong enough industrial base for economic stability and prosperity.
    7. Prosperity DEMANDS free enterprise and a vigorous industrial complex.
    8. China had since the early 1900's many large armies controlled by war lords and they covered a great area and there was constant civil war.
    9. Sun Yat Sen a man of great genius delineated biblical principles of military establishment related to business but was more or less ignored.



10. He came finally into prominence and began to establish a rule in china and was succeeded by his very brilliant son in law, Chang Ki Shek
  11. Chang Ki Shek worked to eliminate the war lords and using biblical principles which he understood very well tried to set up an industrial complex in china knowing the biblical principles very well and using Laws of Divine Establishment functions.
  12. He was one of the GREAT leaders in all of history in the first ½ of the 20<sup>th</sup> century.
  13. From the standpoint of clear and lucid principles in his soul no one exceeded Chang Ki Shek but the problem was to put it into functional effect in a LARGE backward overgrown nation which was basically very agricultural and NOT industrialized at all.
  14. Many nations tried to exploit china as a source of raw materials since the industrial revolution was occurring in the European nations, England, Germany, United States of America etc.
  15. In addition the Japanese had become industrialized and wanted to take over china as well.
  16. Chang Ki Shek came very close to putting it into operation but never totally succeeded and in 1936 the Japanese attacked china and that was the end of any possibility.
  17. It was from then on Kill or Be Killed and he fought for survival ONLY.
  18. He wanted to develop in china a LARGE industrial complex having great natural resources, great power sources and great engineering competence and the potential for china was great.
  19. Had he succeeded china would have become a GREAT WONDERFUL nation for the principles under which he operated were strictly from Bible Doctrine.
  20. Whenever a nation is broken down into large groups of armies devoted to individual war lords the potential could never be reached.
  21. The problem is that there will in these cases always be a group standing on the sidelines waiting for a chance to take over the nation and this is what occurred when the communists moved to take over china.
  22. The Chinese communists were a couple of war lords who saw the best way to better equip their armies was to align themselves with RUSSIA and in northern china some of the warlords went over to the communists and were trained in communist schools and received arms from the communists in Russia.
  23. This formed the nucleus for the development of the Chinese communists.
  24. The Chinese communists worked to establish that which Chang Ki Shek never could do that being a large industrial complex.
  25. China is an engineers dream whether mechanical, electrical etc.
- C. It has never been successfully completed making china a great industrial nation and it takes about 500 years to accomplish with the exception being England, Germany, northern Italy.
1. This was possible since England was a small nation.
  2. Small nations with a good labor market with free enterprise make fantastic places for this to happen.
  3. The greatest combination of peoples was historically french & German peoples in the area of Prussia.
  4. This was seen in the Hohenzollern who took their principles from the bible
  5. They always had a very small but strong army.
  6. This is what occurred when Frederick William realized that no nation ever went on to be great without a strong industrial complex.
  7. He was surrounded by Russia, Rome, France, England, etc.
  8. His break occurred when the edict of nance was revoked and the french Catholics persecuted the Christians in France, the Huguenots who were the industrial middle class of France.
  9. These people put France 100 years ahead of everyone else but St Bartholomew's massacre put them 100 years behind everyone else.

10. These Huguenots who were not killed by the french Catholics were able to escaped to the area of Prussia. and about 200,000 french men moved to Prussia.
  11. This occurred so rapidly that Frederick William's son realized that he needed more energy in north Germany, Prussia.
  12. Coal was the energy of that time and Silesia was south of them and was a nation of coal mines and other nations were also looking at it for energy.
  13. France, Austria and Russia sat down to figure out how to break it up and share it.
  14. They had a great deal of trouble deciding how to do this and while they were negotiating the split of Silesia Frederick the Great took and annexed it to Prussia.
  15. This started a great war the 7 years war which was almost a world war and in the area of America it was the french and Indian war we being caught up in that energy war also.
  16. The Prussians joined with the British who sent gold and the Prussian army was great and first 80,000 French troops moved across the Rhine and were defeated by 30,000 Prussians and then 90,000 Austrians moved up into Prussia. and were also defeated by about 29,000 Prussians.
  17. Then Russians were about to get to Berlin and by great forced marches he took 22,000 men and completely defeated the Russians.
  18. Thus this great military establishment with great discipline and leadership being very small never went to battle on an equal basis always being greatly outnumbered but had the finest industrial complex in the world at that time.
  19. On the outskirts of Berlin their capital and their free enterprise system and industrial complex and great military establishment not only defeated everyone in Europe but set everyone in Europe back to badly they finally said OK you can have Silesia and this gave the Prussians a great energy monopoly.
  20. This made first Frederick II and then Von Bismark able to put together such a fantastic package of conquest that by 1870 Prussia. became Germany and reached out and took everything they wanted into Germany.
  21. Thus the concept which started in central Europe that if a nation had a strong military and strong industrial complex they could defeat anyone anywhere was almost proven unequivocally through 3 great wars, the Franco Prussian War, the 1<sup>st</sup> World War and the 2<sup>nd</sup> World War where they were only stopped by Spiritual Factors.
  22. There was nothing wrong with German industry or military functions or ability but there was everything wrong with Adolph Hitler and German Policy and Demon possession and with Antisemitism.
  23. The Germans invented Nuclear Weapons and Jet Aircraft and used Jets against the American air force.
  24. This principle is biblical and a Strong Military Provides Freedom and an industrial complex provides the prosperity and in time of war provides the equipment.
  25. The only thing which ever defeated Germany was the industrial complex of the United States of America which was greater than anyone in history.
  26. Our industrial complex and flexibility to train a civilian army in a short time were the factors which defeated both Germany and japan.
  27. Since the end of World War II we have lost American industry and it has been supplying industrial knowledge and trucking and everything else for communists to whom we have already surrendered.
  28. We have given the Russian communists the ability to build trucks and Nixon had given them the guidance systems for ballistic missiles to hit a dime from several thousand miles away.
- D. The principle we now study in this section of Bible Doctrine is something which all believers must study and understand:
1. All freedom of any national entity and sovereignty comes from military victory and all prosperity comes from free enterprise and the industrial complex.

2. Free enterprise brings GENIUS to the top and government interference brings imbecility into management and this is the biblical law being totally violated in the United States of America today and the secret to our GREATNESS as a nation.
3. Our greatness and ability lies in our spiritual life and heritage and the ability to mobilize quickly and the greatness of our industrial genius.
4. All these things are what has made us great in the past and since the end of World War II it is all being retracted and withdrawn.

E. There are 2 basic attacks since this time on the industrial complex functions in the United States of America.

1. Labor Unions
2. Federal Bureaucratic regulation.
3. It takes more ability to earn \$1 in 1976 than it took to earn \$100 in 1940.
4. Even with all our inflation it has been much more difficult in 1976 to make a profit and is vastly more difficult in 2018 and the labor situation is almost totally gone bad.

II. Doctrine of the function of the Soul in Labor:

A. Facets of the soul:

1. The real you is invisible and housed in your body and made up of:
  - i. Self Consciousness where you are aware of your own existence
  - ii. You have to frontal lobes in which to do your thinking.
  - iii. You have volition made of + and – aspects.
  - iv. You have Emotion a responder to the thinking of your Right Lobe.
2. Your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul has a:
  - i. Frame of Reference
  - ii. Memory center
  - iii. Vocabulary Storage
  - iv. Categorical Storage
  - v. **norms and standards** the conscience
  - vi. Launch pad by which you apply what you know to life.

B. How these aspects of the soul relate to working for someone:

1. Self Consciousness is where you concentrate and merge yourself into the policy of the organization which pays you for your work.
  - i. This is your ability to concentrate on the job and fulfill the job profile set up for your job
  - ii. This is your ability to carry out the policies set up for your job without deviation or distortion as unto the lord.
2. Mentality being made up of the Right Lobe and Left Lobe of the Soul.
  - i. A good mental attitude is the key to functioning properly in any job.
  - ii. Whether the job is easy to learn or difficult with a good Mental Attitude the job is then mastered.
  - iii. You cannot enter any job function of any kind with a bad Mental Attitude
  - iv. If you have any Mental Attitude Sins when functioning in any job you cannot do a good job.
  - v. A good Mental Attitude reflect spiritual growth and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and doing the job as unto the lord.
3. Volition is your free will and when you connect this with your mentality this means your decisions are based on maximum objectivity in every facet of your job.
  - i. Objectivity related to fellow workers and with regard to management.
  - ii. Freedom from Mental Attitude Sins hooks up with volition to give a recognition of and respect for authority on the job.
  - iii. All decisions are then made in obedience to authority so that when you are on the job your decisions are aligned with the policy of the company so you do what ever is called for by that job.

- iv. Volition therefore MUST be subordinate to those whom you work for in management.
- v. All decisions on the job must be loyal to company policy and must avoid cheating on time by not being:
  - a. Late
  - b. Loafing
  - c. Absent when needed
- 4. Emotion is involved when appreciation for the lord motivates the believer to function in his job under Grace Orientation.
  - i. His love is expressed for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as in Col 3:17 and his emotion never gets out of line with the job or with who and what Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is.
- 5. The Conscience or **norms and standards** as part of the Right Lobe being residence of the integrity principle involves loyalty to management and the function with honor and integrity no matter how menial the task.
  - i. There must always be HONOR and INTEGRITY on the job.
- 6. The Old Sin Nature as the genetic distortion in the body and opposition to proper function of the soul must be recognized also.
  - i. It seeks to frustrate all these principles in working for another for a living
  - ii. Therefore the importance of the function of rebound to maintain proper perspective in the soul on the job.

C. Principles:

- 1. Under the original interpretation of this passage in its application to the labor market of the roman empire which was in fact slavery, neither revolution nor manumission was recommended as a solution to anything.
  - i. When you work for someone else STAY AWAY from the principle of revolution which often starts from malcontented people.
  - ii. The functions of labor unions is very often vicious and involves incredible violence to force people into unions.
  - iii. As a member of the labor class NEVER get involved in violence as a revolt or protest as this is EVIL and puts a person under direct command of Satan Himself.
  - iv. This is the organization of the Proletariat to overthrow authority in a revolution.
- 2. No social action is ever commanded by the word of God.
  - i. It is only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which changes historical things from the inside.
  - ii. The word of God is totally OPPOSED to all social action.
- 3. The word of God condemns and never commends labor unions or guilds.
  - i. A person MUST make it on his own and the individual is what is emphasized by Bible Doctrine.
  - ii. Labor unions are disapproved by the word of God and the ministry of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- 4. It becomes obvious then that the solution to labor problems does not reside in STRIKES.
  - i. This only changes the course of the industrial complex and MANY machines have been invented because labor when out on strike.
  - ii. We see this today in the application of robotics to assembly line functions.
  - iii. This therefore has destroyed many jobs and made the industrial complex MORE complex.
  - iv. NOTHING is ever solved by leaving your job in protest.
  - v. Things are solved by doing a better job and by Bible Doctrine and a STRIKE is never the answer to anything EVER.
  - vi. NO ONE ever gains from a strike neither management or labor.

- vii. Labor loses just as much as management always and the nation eventually loses when strikes cripple industry and force unusually high wages not commensurate with the job forcing the country into depression.
- 5. Bible Doctrine resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul makes permanent changes in life.
  - i. All blessing and prosperity is related to Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - ii. Social action always creates MORE problems while Bible Doctrine is the solution to all problems.
  - iii. Bible Doctrine solves problems and social action creates problems.
- 6. Regeneration and spiritual solutions not legislation is ALWAYS the answer to all problems.
  - i. Legislation is supposed to be used and is designed to stop crime and protect freedom.
  - ii. The purpose of legislation and law is to give you the right to live among other people and to privacy and property and to possess and to use volition to go as far as you can go within the structure of the law.
  - iii. The LAW and LEGISLATION is **NEVER** designed to try to solve problems in the industrial complex. **Col 3:22**

### III. Christian Management:

- A. The problem which often occurs when a christian works for christian management is that they take advantage of the management.
  - 1. When you work for a christian you must still do your job as unto the lord and you in fact can only do MORE than the unbeliever.
- B. When working for another person everything from v1 is always pertinent but for a christian working for another believer it is more difficult to work for another believer.
  - 1. Never must a christian think that they can do anything they want because they work for another christian.
  - 2. This is treating with contempt the authority placed over them in their job in industry.
  - 3. As a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ you are prohibited from treating christian management with disrespect.
- C. Principle:
  - 1. There is a tendency on the part of ignorant or reversionistic believers to take advantage of christian management on the job
  - 2. Being a fellow believer in the same local church does not give labor the right to take advantage of management on the job.
  - 3. In the name of christian brotherhood no believer in labor has the right to take advantage of christian management by loafing on the job, being late, ignoring company policies, demanding special privileges and special consideration not extended to other employees working on the same job.
  - 4. Working for a believer should not only intensify faithfulness diligence and loyalty but also should mean production is better.
  - 5. As a believer under christian management you should be the best employee in the industry.
  - 6. Never take advantage of believers who have authority over you but serve them as you would the lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - 7. This is not degrading to YOU but a sign of nobility and integrity in the Royal Family of God.
- D. Principle:
  - 1. Spiritual equality Does NOT set aside authority.
  - 2. As believers you are subject to many kinds of authority including that of fellow believers.

3. You may sit next to management in the local church and be a friend of them socially but on the job he is the authority and YOU are responsible for obedience.
  4. This is a definite part of honor and integrity in the Royal Family of God.
  5. In management you must be tough and when in management it is wrong to NOT have a policy and pursue it VIGOROUSLY.
  6. Personal relationship nor friendship does not change authority on the job, never has and never will.
- E. This is an ORDER a COMMAND from the word of God.
1. You have a higher order than just company policy as a believer in the labor market.
  2. One of the most difficult things to learn while you learn Bible Doctrine and are becoming arrogant and dogmatic is that God loves the next person learning Bible Doctrine just as much as he loves YOU!

**Lesson #90      Series # 467      1Tim 6:3**

- I. The Business World continued:
- A. Bill Baxter Bulletin #44 13 June 1976 “2 dollars today or \$5 in 5 years.
  - B. Principle:
    1. God loves the next believer as much as he LOVES YOU!.
      - i. He loves every believer with maximum love and this love is totally beyond our comprehension.
      - ii. God’s capacity for love is beyond what we can even imagine.
      - iii. If you take the most obnoxious believer you can imagine God loves that believer as much as he LOVES YOU.
    2. When you are under the authority of a believer in management and they seem to be obnoxious to you despite your going to the same local church this seems wrong to you but in fact is NOT EVEN A CORRECT BUSINESS PRINCIPLE.
      - i. It is imperative as a member of the Royal Family of God believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ that if you are working for someone else you must apply the correct principles of Bible Doctrine.
      - ii. Because when management are believers and labor are believers we must be conscious of the fact that GOD LOVES each believer equally.
      - iii. This applies to wanting to engage in gossip or maligning or exercising any Mental Attitude Sins toward another believer as well.
      - iv. We MUST remember that GOD LOVES ALL BELIEVERS EQUALLY.
- II. Doctrine of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit:
- A. We neglect this generally unless we are in a study where it occurs very often.
    1. This is the most abused doctrine by the “charismatic”, Holy Roller movement.
    2. These people are imbecilic nit wits in reversionism and not in any way HOLY or CHARISMATIC.
    3. These doctrines belong to US as orthodox straight believers who base our entire life on Bible Doctrine.
    4. These “holy rollers” are heretical and apostate and wrong and no one has spoken in tongues since AD70.
    5. Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is not a Pentecostal holy roller speaking in gibberish experience but one of the most glorious Bible Doctrine systems in scripture.
  - B. This is the Bible Doctrine where by God loves EVERY believer equally and where by mechanically all of us are in the Church Age entered into the Royal Family of God.
    1. This is our permanent royalty.
  - C. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit as a doctrine is UNIQUE and is based on the fact that it did not occur prior to the Church Age and is a monopoly of the Church Age.
    1. This is so because it is the mechanic of how we become Royal Family of God.

2. We must distinguish between the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and regeneration of the Human Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  3. Regeneration is the basis for establishing the FAMILY of God and this occurred in the Old Testament Scripture times and also today in the Church Age and will continue throughout **Human History** to the end of **Human History**.
    - i. Any time in the history of man when a person believes in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ God the Holy Spirit regenerates the Human Spirit for that person and this puts them into the family of God permanently for all eternity.
  4. Family of God is divided into those in the ranks including the Old Testament Scripture saints, the Tribulational Saints, and the Millennial Saints AND Royal Family of God those who are in the palace of God from the Church Age.
    - i. In the Church Age when Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ ascended and was seated in session at the right hand of God the Father allowed God the Holy Spirit to take every believer and enter them into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - ii. Therefore this is a unique doctrine and gives our Church Age salvation a **STRONG** uniqueness that no other salvation had or will have.
    - iii. No one in the Old Testament Scripture from Moses to David and all others ever entered into the Royal Family of God.
  5. Every mealy mouthed insignificant mousy believer has something in the Church Age which is greater than the greatest believers in the Old Testament Scripture.
    - i. We have the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
  6. Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is NOT an experience nor something we feel in any way but occurs instantly when we express faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  7. The ministries of God the Holy Spirit at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God are unique in many aspects:
    - i. Regeneration of the Human Spirit by God the Holy Spirit is uniform to every generation and all of **Human History**.
    - ii. Sealing ministry of God the Holy Spirit is unique to the Church Age.
    - iii. Giving of the spiritual gift to each believer is Unique to the Church Age.
    - iv. Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit is unique to the Church Age
    - v. Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is unique to the Church Age.
  8. The uniqueness of this doctrine of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit because **MORALE** of the Royal Family of God begins with understanding of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
    - i. Our Esprit De Corps living in the palace of God forever is based on our orientation to this great doctrine.
- D. The prophecy of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit was accomplished first by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ just prior to interruption of the dispensation of Israel and 10 days prior to the beginning of the Church Age Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ prophesied in **Acts 1:5**
1. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ himself was first to announce this unique factor as the unique person of the universe.
  2. This is only to exist in the Church Age, beginning on Pentecost and ending at the rapture of the church and did not ever occur prior to this and would **NEVER** occur after this.
  3. We were therefore **BLESSED** before we even knew what blessing was and God the Holy Spirit pulled us up by our ears and put us into the palace of God as members of the Royal Family of God and **WE CANNOT EVER GET OUT**.
  4. We are royalty and don't know or act or think like and mostly this is because we are not aware of the significance of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
- E. By definition and mechanics the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is God the Holy Spirit taking each believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and entering him into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.



1. Baptism means identification and union.
    - i. Water baptism is a ritual and means UNION with water.
    - ii. Real Baptism is a historical factor and a spiritual factor and are all REAL identifications.
    - iii. Baptism of the Cup is where Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was identified with our sins.
    - iv. Baptism of Fire is where the unbeliever of the tribulation are identified with fire.
    - v. Baptism of Moses where Moses and the Jews were identified with the cloud (representing Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ) as the passed through the red sea.
    - vi. This is what the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is **1Cor 12:13**
- F. Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is related to the essence of the Royal Family of God
1. This unifies all members of the body of Christ whether we recognize it or not, split up or separate or NOT, forever. **Eph 4:5**
    - i. God loves each believer equally no matter what they are like.
    - ii. We and GOD certainly DO NOT HAVE THE SAME VIEWPOINT ABOUT EVERYTHING.
  2. All members of the Royal Family of God have the same baptism and there is an equality provided at the point of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit which cannot be ever provided at any other time by any other means. **Gal 3:26-27**
    - i. This is NOT water baptism but God the Holy Spirit baptism and eliminates any issues of Race, Social Status, or Gender in the Royal Family of God.
- G. Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is related to and the basis of positional sanctification **Rom 6, Col 2;12, 3:1-2,**
1. The basis for current positional truth **Eph 1:3-6, Col 2:10** the Royal Family of God has a personal relationship with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ King of Kings, Lord of Lords forever.
  2. Understanding our royalty we must link it to the royalty of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ with the link being Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
- H. The royalty of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:
1. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as God is eternal royalty with God the Father and God the Holy Spirit being his Royal Family.
  2. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as a man is royalty is descended as a son of David and Bathsheba through Nathan and Mary and all Jews in the line of David are his Royal Family.
  3. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ seated at the right hand of God the Father is King of ALL Kings and Lord of ALL Lords and this royalty began with his resurrection, ascension and his session at the right hand of God the Father and this is UNIQUE.
  4. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ then became what he never was before since as God he was not King of Kings and as son of David he was NOT King of Kings but in **Hypostatic Union** as the God / Man seated at the right hand of God the Father he IS KING OF KINGS.
  5. As King of Kings and Lord of Lords there is a new royalty established on that basis and this demands a Royal Family.
  6. When he comes back to the earth after all his enemies are subdued he must bring his FAMILY with him but there is no family at the moment he sat down with God.
  7. Therefore the age of Israel was suspended and the Church Age begun in order to form this Royal Family of God and we each of us as believers in all of the Church Age are part of the Royal Family of God.
  8. This uniqueness of the royalty of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ leads to the fact that the Church Age believer is also unique in that there is a unique system whereby he becomes royalty and this is based on Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.



9. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is unique and has never occurred before and will never occur again.
10. We therefore have a combination of 3 unique things:
  - i. Uniqueness of the royalty of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ based on his strategic victory in the Angelic Conflict in Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross for all human sins.
  - ii. Uniqueness of the believer in the Church Age whereby we each become part of the Royal Family of God
  - iii. Uniqueness of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit in causing the creation of the Royal Family of God in this Church Age ONLY.
- I. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit occurs at the instant of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God **Col 2:12, 1Cor 12:13**
  1. This does not mean at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God that we have a party like they did at the first instance of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
  2. Since there are many of the spiritual gifts which were extant at the first Pentecost now canceled anyone who alleges to function under one of these spiritual gifts with the predominant one being speaking in tongues is totally and absolutely apostate.
- J. Therefore we have a very important principle:
  1. **Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is NOT an experience.**
- K. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit interrupts the Jewish dispensation and starts a new dispensation. **Matt 16:18, compared to Acts 1:5, which must be compared to Acts 11:15-17**
- L. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is one of 7 bible listed baptisms
  1. Real Baptisms:
    - i. Moses 1Cor 10:2
    - ii. Cross Matt 20:22
    - iii. God the Holy Spirit **1Cor 12:13**
    - iv. Fire **Matt 3:11, Luke 3:16**
  2. Ritual Baptisms:
    - i. Of John
    - ii. of Jesus
    - iii. Of Believers in the early Church Age.
- III. Doctrine of Positional Truth:
  - A. It means whether carnal or spiritual in Super Grace of reversionism YOU WILL ALWAYS HAVE IT.
    1. You have a position in Christ and will always be IN CHRIST
    2. You may be the most disgusting christian in history but you will always have position in Christ being a member of the Royal Family of God and in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ. **1Cor 1:2+30**
    3. Being in union with Christ there is and cannot be any judgment in eternity **Rom 8:1**
    4. Because of it you are qualified to live with God forever which is impossible without being in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    5. We share the Absolute Righteousness of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the basis for justification and imputation and thus can live with God forever
    6. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is Eternal Life and we have his Eternal Life and thus can live with God forever.
    7. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was elected from **Eternity Past** and we share his election and thus are foreordained and predestined something special for the Royal Family of God.
    8. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is a high priest and we share his priesthood being personal individual priests in the Church Age.
    9. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the King of Kings and we therefore are Royal Family of God.

10. This all adds up to a fantastic concept and principle and that is simply put both TEMPORAL and ETERNAL SECURITY. **Rom 8:38-39**

### **Rom 8:38-39**

**v38: Therefore, I, Paul, stand convinced, that neither any aspect of death nor life, neither fallen angels (or elect) nor high ranking ruling demons ie principalities, or all human powers, neither present things nor future things, v39: neither any lofty concepts of arrogance of anything residing in the height of stellar space, ie Heaven, nor extreme poverty including the depth of Hell, nor any other created being, shall have the power to be able to separate us; especially believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God; from the Love of God the Father which is IN CHRIST JESUS OUR LORD.**

11. The KEY is our being IN UNION WITH CHRIST and you cannot be outside of Christ only IN CHRIST.
  12. We have Eternal Security because of regeneration being born into the family of God and cannot be BORN OUT of it.
  13. **All you say when you say or think some sin you have committed will cause you to lose your salvation is that you are the BIGGEST ASS IN CHRISTIANITY AND ALSO THE MOST ARROGANT ASS.**
  14. **You are so full of arrogance that you think you can commit a sin which is GREATER THAN THE PLAN OF GOD.**
  15. **TO THINK THAT YOU ALL BY YOUR LITTLE SELF CAN COMMIT A SIN WHICH WILL CANCEL THE PLAN OR PROMISE OF GOD IS THE MOST ARROGANT THING IMAGINABLE.**
  16. **THIS DEMONSTRATES THAT YOU HAVE YOUR HEAD STUCK IN THE WRONG PLACE AND YOU HAVE TO GET YOUR AWAY FROM LOOKING AT SIN.**
  17. **Just because our sins shock us does not mean God does not get shocked by our sins having known about them long before we ever committed them and made provision for them with the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.**
- B. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit resulting in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ means:
1. It is not an experience
  2. It is not progressive and you cannot improve it since it was perfect when you received it and remains perfect forever.
  3. We have a salvation from God which cannot be destroyed by any circumstance or creature ever for any reason and it is NOT related in any way to our human merit or ability.
  4. This salvation is eternal and will last forever and is perfect the day we believed in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and will be perfect 1000000 years from now.
  5. As a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ understanding fundamental biblical orthodox christian doctrine we DO NOT TOLERATE HOLY ROLLERS WHO ARE EVIL, APOSTATE, VICIOUS, REVERSIONISTIC AND NOTHING BUT TROUBLE.
  6. These people are WORSE than communists BUT God loves them all.
- C. If you work for someone who is an obnoxious christian boss of foreman remember GOD loves him just as much as YOU and YOU are commanded to respect his authority as long as you work on that job.
1. You are not commanded to respect the authority of a holy roller (Unless you are under their supervision in a job) for they have no authority over you.

#### IV. Principles:

- A. God has designed in **Eternity Past** special blessing paragraphs for every member of the Royal Family of God.
  1. Every believer is LOVED by God
  2. Every believer has a Super Grace blessing paragraph and may or may not get it.
- B. Furthermore special blessing when they are received ALWAYS GLORIFY GOD.
  1. Functioning under the Grace Apparatus for Perception consistently produces a command post in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and ultimately reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  2. At Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God you receives Super Grace blessings and this blessing in the devils world glorifies GOD.
    - i. This includes 5 categories of blessing:
      - a. Temporal
      - b. Spiritual
      - c. By association
      - d. Historical impact
      - e. Dying Blessings
    - ii. When you start glorifying God is when you receive your Super Grace blessings.
    - iii. In addition if you receive your Super Grace blessings in time you WILL receive surpassing grace blessings and rewards in eternity.
    - iv. NOTHING you can say think or do in this life will ever glorify God.
    - v. God is only glorified when he can bless you in time on the basis of your intake of Bible Doctrine and developing of capacity for that blessing.
    - vi. Everything you receive any Super Grace blessing SATAN screams with pain and frustration.
    - vii. This is related to eternity and all decorations in eternity are based on our performance in time with regard to intake of Bible Doctrine.
  3. Christian Management and Christian Labor are BOTH beneficiaries of the same blessing process.
    - i. There can be differentiations because of circumstances of each
    - ii. There is a Super Grace blessing package for every category of believer.
    - iii. Whether either gets the blessing benefits depends on the attitude of the individual in management or labor toward Bible Doctrine and this all depends on the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  4. Therefore both christian management and labor MUST follow the colors to the high ground of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God possessing maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  5. So while one is working for the other in this life BOTH should be accumulating Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul through daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  6. Therefore, in the local church each category is still Royal Family of God learning Bible Doctrine BUT outside the local church one works UNDER or FOR the other with proper respect given to the one in authority.
    - i. Each is advancing individually to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and the presentation and receipt of his Super Grace blessing in time which is a tactical victory in the Angelic Conflict.

**Lesson #91      Series # 467      1Tim 6:3**

- I. Business from the standpoint of Labor
  - A. We must understand that we MUST learn Bible Doctrine and also LEARN how to apply it.
    1. We must accumulate Bible Doctrine as rapidly as possible and also then how to apply that Bible Doctrine.

2. If you learn Bible Doctrine without the understanding of how to apply it you become a DOGMATIC person without any real reason to be.
  3. You become inflexible and this is a sign of stupidity (See Romans for Flexibility vs Inflexibility) when there is no issue involved or the issue is ridiculous.
- B. The business world is at its worst in the 1976 period and is far worse today in 2018
1. Article: Paul Harvey "Unemployment an inexcusable burden" 5 June 1976 Houston Tribune
    - i. Study by Martin Feldstein
      - a. More than ½ of those on unemployment have never had jobs and never worked.
  2. Since the 1970s the business world in the United States of America has had more problems than any other time in our history and these are mostly created by various aspects of reversionism.
  3. This is not simply an economic problem but in fact is much more and actually a spiritual problem and since the 70s this has also grown to a point where we face great disaster in the industrial complex of the United States of America.
- C. The final command in v2 is one given to Timothy to teach how to apply Bible Doctrine.
1. The doctrine was stated again and again, in Ephesians 6, Colossians 3-4 and now in Timothy for application.
  2. The weakness of Timothy allowed the various aspects of application of Bible Doctrine for many aspects of life to be put into one single epistle
- D. As Royal Family of God we are left on this earth for full time christian service and no matter how humble or insignificant your job may be it IS your full time christian service.
1. Therefore you must DO YOUR JOB AS UNTO THE LORD and also ACCEPT AUTHORITY OF MANAGEMENT AND THE POLICY OF THE ORGANIZATION YOU WORK FOR AND ACCEPT THE AUTHORITY OF MANAGEMENT AS IF JESUS CHRIST WAS PERSONALLY IN CHARGE OF THIS ORGANIZATION.
  2. The spiritual gift of communicating Bible Doctrine that of Pastor Teacher has nothing to do with studying, it is a communication gift to present Bible Doctrine to a congregation verbally.
    - i. The spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher does NOT guarantee that the Pastor Teacher can DIG OUT what is in the word and this only comes by self discipline and proper preparatory training, and hard work.
    - ii. The studying of the Pastor Teacher is the hardest type of soul work.
    - iii. The spiritual gift does not give the Pastor Teacher any special insight as to the content of the doctrine in scripture.
    - iv. MOST people assume when they think they have the gift of Pastor Teacher that all you need do when you want a message is to sit down for 5 minutes and pray to God and lightning will strike you and you will have a full message and this is the way of life to MOST clergy.
    - v. A person may have a gift of Pastor Teacher but cannot communicate anything because he has not spent any time studying the scripture.
  3. Timothy is to teach these thing but has never done so for any of the things mentioned in this whole book.
    - i. Timothy was the most overrated man in the history of Christianity and was a lazy Momma's boy waiting for everything to DROP into his lap as Pastor Teacher.
    - ii. The only way to get information to teach is to STUDY and this is HARD WORK.
  4. The spiritual gift only picks up after you have proper preparation.
    - i. Every pastor is sitting on a gold mine but the gold remains in the mine and the Pastor Teacher must go in and break it out and sort it and process it and when the slag is gone he can then open his mouth and communicate.

- ii. There is NO GIFT from God the Holy Spirit which covers the acquisition of Bible Doctrine from scripture it requires, preparation, training, consistency, dedication, self discipline, and HARD WORK.
  - iii. The spiritual gift only covers the refining of the principles of Bible Doctrine into presentable information NOT THE DIGGING to get to it.
  - iv. The Bible Doctrine is in the bible and the Pastor Teacher MUST dig it out.
  - v. A believer cannot dig it out himself because the Bible Doctrine must be TAUGHT to the believer under a system of authority.
  - vi. You cannot learn by reading the bible but by listening to a Pastor Teacher teaching you and if you could learn for yourself by reading the bible there would be no need for the Pastor Teacher and this would be total anarchy in Christianity.
  - vii. God has ordained the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher as an authoritative gift so that we as believers can grow in the Spiritual Life.
5. The spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher is of no value without preparation, study and self discipline.
  6. The Pastor Teacher must function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception Operation Z consistently in order to be able to TEACH.
- E. Didosko == teach, communicate Bible Doctrine
1. It means God has ordained a classroom where teaching MUST occur.
    - i. The classroom can be anyplace, anywhere under any circumstances.
    - ii. However wherever there are 3 believers and a Pastor Teacher that is a classroom in this dispensation and today in the Church Age it is the local church.
    - iii. The policy ordained at the beginning of the Church Age for the local church as the classroom has never changed and the local church is the ONLY place for the teaching function of the Pastor Teacher presenting Bible Doctrine.
    - iv. No local church can be a true local church when it bends to a denominational organization and no denomination can have any local churches and denominations are weak pastors leaning on each other with one strong person making policy controlling everything.
    - v. There must be ONE Pastor Teacher for ONE congregation to make up the local church and the members of the congregation come to the local church as students without portfolio without rights except to sit and listen and concentrate with respect for the authority and self discipline.
    - vi. The local church is not a sacred building nor a “sanctuary” but the body of the believer is itself the sanctuary.
  2. It means AUTHORITY as well and to communicate with authority.
    - i. Communication is MONOLOGUE and it is not what the congregation thinks or has opinion about but what the Pastor Teacher has dug out of scripture and is in his soul therefore what HE THINKS.
    - ii. The opinions of the congregation are absolutely meaningless when they enter the local church and the only thing the members must think about is the Bible Doctrine which MUST be presented in a teaching format.
    - iii. The Pastor Teacher has absolute authority in addition to the proper preparation and study habits and spiritual gift.
  3. It means INTEGRITY OF MORAL COURAGE and it takes courage to teach the TRUTH of Bible Doctrine no matter what people think.
    - i. This means INTEGRITY and it means that the congregation can RELY on the fact that what is taught is from the word of God directly.
    - ii. Whether what is in the bible being taught hurts the Pastor Teacher, you, your friends or anyone else it MUST BE TAUGHT AS IT IS FOUND IN THE SCRIPTURE.

- iii. It is the responsibility of the Pastor Teacher to communicate whatever is in the bible and not water it down.
  - iv. Bible Doctrine is designed to chop both us and the Pastor Teacher up in order to allow our growth and advance in the Spiritual Life.
  - v. Knowing that something to be taught will not be popular and in fact antagonize or irritate some of the congregation is the job of the Pastor Teacher and HOW that material is presented is part of the spiritual gift.
4. It means FUNCTION which is communication and demands that the congregation concentrate and that the Pastor Teacher can get your attention and HOLD IT.
- i. It is the ministry of God the Holy Spirit to give you concentration few can concentrate for more than 20 min.
  - ii. When the congregation is NOT concentrating the Pastor Teacher must digress to bring something in to lend color and perspicacity to the point to allow the congregation to regroup for concentration and THIS IS PART OF THE SPIRITUAL GIFT.
5. It means OBSERVATION by the Pastor Teacher of the congregation.
- i. This is important so that the Pastor Teacher can tell when the congregation is or is not getting the doctrine and concentrating.
  - ii. There Pastor Teacher must constantly evaluate his teaching efficacy and be aware from his observation of the Status Quo of the congregation so as to know when to call it off and when to keep going.
6. It means a SYSTEM of DISCIPLINE in the association of the Royal Family of God.
- i. It means academic discipline in the classroom but also a system of discipline in the Royal Family of God.
  - ii. All rank in the Royal Family of God is related to the principle of Didosko or Pastor Teacher.
  - iii. There are 3 grades of rank in the Church Age:
    - a. Pastor Teacher
    - b. Deacon
    - c. Believer.
  - iv. There are no other systems of rank in the Church Age for any local church and any system of ecclesiastical authority which include more than 3 degrees of rank it is apostasy.
  - v. In the Church Age we are all Royal Family of God not peons and losers so the lowest degree of rank is ROYALTY and the royal priest
  - vi. Then there is Royal Priest Deacon and then on top is Royal Priest Pastor Teacher.
  - vii. When there is any other infusion of officers or ranks for any local church (Denominational structures are in this category) you are looking at APOSTATE FUNCTION.
7. It means a SYSTEM OF PRIORITIES for the Royal Family of God.
- i. Priority #1 is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
    - a. This cannot be achieved until Priority #2 is fulfilled in part.
    - b. This is a principle without practice when you are first born again as a believer.
    - c. The only way to make this a principle with practice is for priority #2 to be engaged in.
  - ii. Priority #2 is Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine consistently.
    - a. During the early stages of the Spiritual Life is actually priority #1 for all which we know about Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is from the written word of God.

- b. Priority #1 is Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine UNTIL YOU REACH Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and then Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ puts a mature system of priorities into operation.
    - c. This system is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ #1 Bible Doctrine #2
  - iii. Priority #3 must be consistent assembly in the local church for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
    - a. The focus on the local church MUST be the teaching of Bible Doctrine not any other program or function.
    - b. When you go to the local church and assemble you are to function under the royal priesthood to learn Bible Doctrine, and some singing worship, giving worship and Eucharist worship.
    - c. The biggest thing is to be able to sit and concentrate while you are being destroyed by the doctrine being taught.
    - d. When Bible Doctrine is first priority for the believer he can be offended or upset by what is taught and yet objectivity will snap him back into focus to continue to learn Bible Doctrine.
- F. The Pastor Teacher must be a student, teacher, administrator to find administrative people and leader of the flock of the local church.
  - 1. He must have absolute authority in his teaching in order that the believer might construct the altar in the soul and build the Edification Complex of the Soul and follow the colors to the high ground of Spiritual Maturity and establish the command post in the soul so that the believer can become spiritually self sustaining and totally dependent on the Lord.
- G. The Pastor Teacher must teach you the Bible Doctrine from the Bible and then must also teach you how to apply it also from the bible.
  - 1. The Book of Hebrews is all academic with very little application while the Timothy is all application and very little academic.
  - 2. The only way to get Bible Doctrine and application is to teach from the bible VERSE BY VERSE and there is NO OTHER WAY to do this.
  - 3. This is EXPOSITORY teaching and as the Pastor Teacher teaches a passage he will also be teaching how to apply that Bible Doctrine.

#### 1Tim 6:2

v2: Now on the other hand, those in slavery or as laborers who have Believers as their authority as masters or management, should not despise, look down on, scorn, treat with contempt or be disrespectful of them because they are fellow members of the Royal Family of God with eternal security, but to a greater degree even more so be serving them with respect and obedience and function under the profile of the job, because these same christian ones are recipients of the same benefits as masters in management or authority being Believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace with Super Grace blessings and beloved by God. (Timothy and All Pastor Teachers) Dig out and lay out these things, principles, doctrines from consistent study of the bible then BE Teaching and Exhorting or Instructing how to apply these principles of Bible Doctrine.

#### Lesson #92      Series # 467      1Tim 6:3

- I. July 4 1775 Conference: Study of Arabs
- II. The Business World continued:
  - A. In our function as believers we are to learn Bible Doctrine and then LEARN how to apply Bible Doctrine.
    - 1. The Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) is as close as it gets to automatic application of Bible Doctrine.
  - B. The Military, Evangelism and Business are the 3 greatest areas of christian service today.
    - 1. The business area is the greatest of these.
    - 2. The military should be if we had universal military training.

- C. On the part of christian labor there were apparently some very sloppy attitudes in the ancient world and obviously this extends to today.
1. These attitudes were based on an understanding of Bible Doctrines but lack of understanding as to how to apply them.
  2. Many Christians began to quit their jobs and loafing WAITING for the Rapture having learned the doctrine of the Immanency of the rapture and this is ARROGANCE.
    - i. It is automatic arrogance to assume that any immanent doctrine applies directly to us NOW!
    - ii. The Immanency of the rapture was first taught in AD40 and from then until NOW is a LONG TIME and any generation could have and most likely had some how did assume that it was going to occur in their time and it in fact could have.
    - iii. Even though the doctrine of the rapture is a great doctrine it is not to be abused by miss application of failure to use correct application.
  3. Labor often gets hold of this doctrine and abuses it thinking that what they are doing in labor is basically unimportant because tomorrow they may be gone.
    - i. What difference are a few mistakes in this typing or bookkeeping entry tomorrow is the rapture.
  4. There is even today a sloppy attitude among believers who work for others especially those who work for other believers.
- D. The next 3 verses to be understood properly must be considered as it is written in Koine Greek which is the language of the streets a common language.
1. It is minus Euphemisms which are translator's attempts to NOT OFFEND those who read their translations.
    - i. In the Old Testament Scripture modern translators took the scripture of Isaiah which was explaining what the Rhab Shakah was saying when he came to Jerusalem to make his pronouncement for surrender of the Jews.
    - ii. He had great support of at least 125000 infantry which had not been defeated in battle in 200 years.
    - iii. He said "If you don't surrender we will destroy everyone who pisseth against the wall" This is NOT a euphemism.
    - iv. Modern translations say "We will destroy all your male population". This IS a EUPHEMISM.
    - v. The Koine Greek is MINUS Euphemisms and is a very common language and has hells and damns etc talking about heaven and hell and uses all sorts of expletives etc.
    - vi. Believers today when they come to church today want to be separated from the real world and live in a fantasy world which is a combination of Alice in Wonderland and Rebecca of Sunnybrook Farm.
    - vii. They think the Spiritual Life is away from it all but in reality the Spiritual Life is right down in the dirt where we live.
    - viii. The language of the New Testament Scripture is KOINE because it is filled with expletives and people understand those and use them is the language of the street since everyone understands that.
  2. Koine Greek is the most beautiful combination of languages imaginable to communicate Bible Doctrine and it is technical and many common words take on technical meanings
  3. It is a mechanically perfect language.
    - i. English as our language is not really English but is Americanese but in fact is mechanically one of the poorest languages in existence.
    - ii. It is like comparing a Model T with a Bugatti or Dusenburg.
    - iii. It makes it very difficult to translate anything into our language and you must be WORDY to get the meaning across.



- iv. Because the mechanical part of the Koine Greek is so great that there is never any doubt as to what the Greek is saying.
- v. One of the ways to do this with the use of conditional clauses which in the Greek are EXACT communicators.
- vi. In the English conditional clauses are EXACT non communicators.
- vii. IF is non specific in the English but in the Greek IF is and indicator of a very specific outcome or expectation.
- viii. This is due to the use of very specific words for very specific kinds of conditional clauses.
- ix. These included with particles and verbs give very specific meanings.

E. There are 4 conditional clause types (review them from prior notes or studies)

- 1. v3-5 is one sentence and is a conditional clause.
- 2. It is opposition from believers under the influence of evil.
  - i. Some believers will not accept the authority of management without regard to his personal Status Quo and personality.
  - ii. The status of personality of the manager is of no consequence since he is still the authority and believers must know this and simply OBEY.
- 3. These 3 verses point out to labor that opposition by christian labor to this is totally out of line.
  - i. It is a matter of doctrine and full time christian service for labor to obey your boss and company policy and doing the job as unto the lord.
  - ii. It should be like Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ himself is your manager.

F. V3 is the Prodasis, v4-5 is the Apotasis and this is a first class condition recognizing the FACT of opposition and then some conclusions drawn from this.

III. Opposition from believers under the influence of evil v3-5

A. The Prodasis is true in this verse and there was opposition by the congregation of Ephesus to the principle of being obedient to a boss who was obnoxious and vicious and mean and unfair and cruel and who did not like believers and was blasphemous and used foul language.

- 1. Therefore there is opposition to Bible Doctrine to those who should give it instant assent and obedience

B. A definite category is expressed without listing who is in that category and therefore is an IMPERSONAL means of specifying a category therefore is called an indefinite pronoun and use here. 'ANYONE'

- 1. This is a category in the Royal Family of God thus believers who work for another person and are in some stage of reversionism and under the influence of evil and do not like the idea of accepting the authority over them.
- 2. They do everything they can to LOAF or do a poor job and even quit working and go on relief from the government.
- 3. The believer is never commanded to be disruptive to authority and is what is occurring by these reversionistic believers.
- 4. Labor here and in our times were and are antagonistic to biblical functions.
- 5. There will always be false teachers infiltrating teaching false doctrines and that it is OK to go against authority and have disrespect for authority.
- 6. Apostasy is the what is occurring when this occurs.
- 7. Apostasy is 2 sides of the same coin:
  - i. Reversionism on one side
  - ii. Evil on the other side.

C. It is wrong for anyone working for anyone else to be disruptive and antagonistic to authority even if they do not get along with the boss.

- 1. Not liking the boss or having an opposing opinion is not ever an issue for labor.

2. The issue is authority in the industrial complex and is clearly defined in scripture and is demanded and a person in labor is PAID to respect authority and fulfill the policy of the organization they are working for.

D. There is here in this first clause separation for 2 different types of apostasy.

1. First is being under the influence of Evil teaching.
2. Second is being under the influence of evil rejecting Bible Doctrine.
3. Wherever it comes from these things are WRONG.
  - i. Whether you don't like the boss or whether some UNION steward comes along and tells you to not work so hard you are making the rest look bad by doing so.
4. This happens now and did also happen then in the ancient world.

E. It is always to the disadvantage of the believer to not follow the teaching of the doctrines of God.

F. Godliness is a technical designation of a doctrine of the potential Status Quo of believers.

IV. Doctrine of Godliness:

A. This is a technical word and has a technical meaning as we find in any field of life which describe the functions in that area or sphere.

1. Godliness therefore cannot be explained by what it sounds like and it is highly technical and is the **norms and standard** for the Spiritual Life.

B. Definition:

1. It is derived from (gr) "eusebeia" and (gr) "theosebeia"
2. It literally means 'DUTY TO GOD'
3. Technically it is the doctrine of the balance of residence of the soul and is a synonym for Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
4. It is found in 3 doctrines:
  - i. Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit which occurs at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God because we are Royal Family of God forever and this is our family coat of arms or escutcheon and shows we are different from and HIGHER than all GREAT believers in the past.
    - a. This also means that in this dispensation Demon possession cannot occur for any believer.
    - b. This is automatic beginning at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God going on forever and we are never commanded to this Status Quo.
  - ii. Filling of God the Holy Spirit also occurs at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and therefore controls the soul.
    - a. This is different from the Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit and can be lost when we engage in carnality.
    - b. We are in contrast commanded to be under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit called walking in God the Holy Spirit so that God the Holy Spirit can control your soul.
    - c. God the Holy Spirit however does not control the soul of the believer when we are sinning or in reversionism.
    - d. God the Holy Spirit never leaves the body but can be locked up into a small compartment and NOT control the soul.
    - e. This is the absolute nature of spirituality in the Christian Way of Life where our souls is either under the control of God the Holy Spirit, the Filling of God the Holy Spirit or NOT.

C. Spirituality:

1. Spirituality and Godliness are 2 simple doctrines which all must understand since from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we have been related to God the Holy Spirit.
2. Definition:
  - i. It is God the Holy Spirit controlling your SOUL NOT your body.
    - a. He indwells your body forever, your physical body and your Resurrection Body when you receive it.

- ii. Therefore you must learn to distinguish between the ministries of God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - iii. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God God the Holy Spirit does 5 things for us in the Church Age.
    - a. In the Old Testament Scripture God the Holy Spirit did only 1 thing for the believers of that dispensation, Regeneration.
  - iv. In every person who is 'born again' through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone God the Holy Spirit is the AGENT and makes it possible to be 'born again' which is a regeneration of our lost Human Spirit.
    - a. There are 39 irrevocable things accomplished at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God one is being born again or having the Human Spirit regenerated BY God the Holy Spirit.
    - b. This makes us family of God and all believers in all of **Human History** are **Family of God**.
  - v. God the Holy Spirit also functions to provide us with the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit which enters us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who is seated at the right hand of God the Father.
    - a. This is the basis for our possessing Eternal Life to live with God since Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is Eternal Life.
    - b. It is the basis for receiving and possessing the Absolute Righteousness of God since Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is Absolute Righteousness.
    - c. It is the basis for entering the Plan of God since Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is in the Plan of God and is elected, predestined and foreordained from **Eternity Past** and being in union with him we share his predestination and foreordination.
    - d. We share his election and his priesthood and as King of Kings we share his royalty making us **Royal Family of God Only** in the Church Age.
  - vi. The indwelling of God the Holy Spirit is the royal escutcheon.
    - a. God the Holy Spirit is in the body of every believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the Church Age and forever.
    - b. This is the basis for Eternal Security as well.
  - vii. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we are also SEALED by God the Holy Spirit and this is our TEMPORAL and ETERNAL security.
    - a. We belong to God forever and we are so sealed by God the Holy Spirit
    - b. We are the personal property of God and will always be so and there never will be a time when we are not so.
    - c. You don't have to go through some effort to belong to God and don't have to fret over being or not being in full time christian service because we are from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God in full time service to God.
    - d. This is completed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and nothing we can do will add to our Status Quo being in full time christian service.
  - viii. Distribution of spiritual gifts:
    - a. God the Holy Spirit provides at least ONE spiritual gift at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    - b. Spiritual growth takes care of awareness of our spiritual gift and reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace will enable us to operate under our spiritual gift either consciously or subconsciously.
3. Post salvation ministry of God the Holy Spirit is what occurs after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

- i. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we are told to express faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone accepting his Substitutionary Spiritual Death as payment for our sins.
  - a. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we receive 39 irrevocable assets from God including the above 5 ministries of God the Holy Spirit.
  - b. These 39 assets for our spiritual life on the earth ruled by Satan are perfect and non-improvable.
- ii. 1 moment after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we become a believer in time.
  - a. God has a plan for your life and he wants desperately to make you successful and wealthy and bless you in front of all the world outside the Cosmic Dynasphere systems.
  - b. He cannot do this unless you grow up and develop capacity for blessing so that the total objective of the Spiritual Life is to grow up and gain capacity so that GOD can bless you and by so doing in the devils world be glorified.
  - c. He will bless us in time upon reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and moving toward or into Ultra Super Grace, and in dying with Dying Grace and after our death in eternity with Surpassing Grace and extra rewards for eternity.
  - d. All of this is keyed on your life in this world and growing up spiritually and glorifying God by receiving this wonderful package of blessing from him.
  - e. Why does God keep you alive? To bless you
  - f. Why does God keep you alive if he cannot bless you? To discipline you.
  - g. Whether you are disciplined or blessed is based on your attitude toward Bible Doctrine.
  - h. God the Holy Spirit therefore has a GREAT post salvation ministry for every believer and if NOT then we as believers will be as miserable as possible until we die the Sin Unto Death (more Divine Discipline) and then we will be face to face with the lord and no more sorrow or tears.
- iii. There is the ministry of God the Holy Spirit controlling the soul.
  - a. God the Holy Spirit indwells us forever but the real issue is to have God the Holy Spirit controlling the soul called Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
- iv. The SOUL:
  - a. It is invisible
  - b. It is composed of
    - i ) Self Consciousness
    - ii ) Right Lobe (thinking area) & Left Lobe (processor) forming the mentality
    - iii ) Volition + & -
    - iv ) Emotion a responder to the Right Lobe thinking
    - v ) The Right Lobe has:
      - a) Memory Center
      - b) Vocabulary Storage
      - c) Categorical Storage
      - d) **Norms and Standards** for priorities
      - e) Launch Pad for application to life.
  - c. {ff} (it is described here as the soul having an Old Sin Nature but we know the Old Sin Nature is a genetic distortion of the human body caused by the fall of Ishah and Adam in the garden and transmitted to every human being by fertilization of the female Egg by the Male sperm.)

- v. God the Holy Spirit deals with every aspect of the soul:
  - a. the self consciousness of the believer under Filling of God the Holy Spirit becomes strictly objective.
  - b. The thinking becomes based on the content of Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe Divine Viewpoint.
  - c. The decisions on the basis of the content of Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit line up with the Plan of God and word of God.
  - d. The emotion helps give us capacity for life and it has no ability to think nor does it have any **norms and standards**.
    - i ) It is only a place where our capacities for life are expressed.
- vi. When God the Holy Spirit controls the soul the influence of the body's Old Sin Nature is suppressed or depressed and the Old Sin Nature does not motivate to produce sin.
  - a. When you have some doctrinal content then the Old Sin Nature will not be able to motivate to produce Human Good.
    - i ) Under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit we are therefore freed by God the Holy Spirit from being under control of our lust patterns.
    - ii ) Lust is the great motivator in life such as
      - a) Approbation
      - b) Sexual
      - c) Monetary
      - d) Power
      - e) Materialism
      - f) ETC.
    - iii ) In addition under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit suppresses the trends toward lasciviousness and / or asceticism.
    - iv ) Therefore the Old Sin Nature is depressed and its functions are suppressed.
- vii. Therefore the believer is said to be filled with God the Holy Spirit when God the Holy Spirit controls the soul and when the Old Sin Nature controls the soul he is said to be carnal.
- viii. Therefore EVERY Believer has God the Holy Spirit controlling his soul or the Old Sin Nature controlling his soul.
  - a. He is therefore said to be "spiritual" or "carnal".
- ix. We have vocabulary for:
  - a. Being filled with God the Holy Spirit **Eph 5:18**
  - b. Walking in the spirit **Gal 5:16**
  - c. Walk in the Light **1John 1:7**
  - d. Partakers of the divine nature Peter
- x. We call this the Filling of God the Holy Spirit but there are technical phrases for this Status Quo:
  - a. Filling, Walking, Partaking all meaning God the Holy Spirit controls the soul.
- 4. We have 2 concepts on the believer fundamentally:
  - i. Spirituality vs Carnality
    - a. These are mutually exclusive and therefore are absolute status in the believer in time
  - ii. When the believer has his soul controlled by God the Holy Spirit he is **SPIRITUAL**.
  - iii. When the believer has his soul controlled by the Old Sin Nature he is Carnal.

- iv. You are either Carnal or Spiritual at all times ONE OR THE OTHER and they are mutually exclusive.
  - v. You cannot be BOTH nor can you be partially spiritual or carnal as this confuses the difference between absolutes and relatives.
  - vi. In the relative concepts of Christianity:
    - a. We start at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God as infant believers and if we are functioning under positive volition toward Bible Doctrine we then move toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
      - i ) This moves us from infancy through adolescence to adulthood.
      - ii ) An infant, adolescent or adult mature believer can be spiritual or carnal.
      - iii ) So any area of the relative Status Quo of a believer can be in an absolute Status Quo also.
    - b. When the believer has no positive volition toward Bible Doctrine he then moves into the realm of the stages of reversionism.
      - i ) This person rejects or neglects rebound and thus moves through the stages of reversionism as well.
  - vii. The great issue which starts your Christian Way of Life is IMITATION:
    - a. Spirituality is imitation of GOD **2Cor 3:3, Eph 5:1, 2<sup>nd</sup> Pet 1:4**
    - b. Carnality or Reversionism is Imitation of the unbeliever. **1Cor 3:3, Gal 5:19-21, 1John 1:6**
    - c. Therefore all of your life as a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ you are either imitating God or imitating the unbeliever.
5. Spirituality is a function of the Royal Priesthood and is therefore NOT subject to the **Mosaic Law** or any Leviticus system of the previous dispensation **Rom 5:2-4, 10:4, 13:8, Gal 5:18.**
  6. In keeping with partnership of the divine essence 2<sup>nd</sup> Pet 1:4, spirituality produces the character of the incarnate Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in us to the extent which we have Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul **Gal 4:19, 5:22-23, 2Pet 1:4, 1John 2:5-6**
  7. The general objective of Filling of God the Holy Spirit is control of the soul and is related to at least 5 factors in the Spiritual Life.
    - i. Partnership with divine essence **2Pet 1:4** and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit is the means of fulfilling this.
    - ii. Imitation of God **Eph 5:1**
    - iii. Glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ **John 7:39, 16:14, 1Cor 6:19-20**
    - iv. The Law is fulfilled **Rom 8:2-4**
  8. The purpose of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit in the infant, adolescent and mature believer is the proper function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception. **John 14:26, 16:12-14, 1Cor 2:9-16**
  9. Spirituality is LOST through carnality but recovered through rebound procedures.
    - i. You cannot ever lose the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit but you can lose the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
    - ii. When a believer sins he is motivated to sin by the Old Sin Nature and when he uses Negative Volition hooked up with the Old Sin Nature this results in production of sin.
    - iii. The sin is done because we want to and when this happens we have the grieving or quenching of God the Holy Spirit.
    - iv. This is immediate loss of Filling of God the Holy Spirit – spirituality.
    - v. ALWAYS IN SIN VOLITION IS INVOLVED THEREFORE VOLITION MUST ALWAYS BE INVOLVED IN RECOVERY.

- vi. In rebound procedures we NAME, CITE OR ACKNOWLEDGE our sins directly to God then he always forgives us and cleanses us from all unknown sins all having been judged on the cross in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - vii. This is then recovery from carnality and then God the Holy Spirit controls the soul.
10. Results of spirituality:
- i. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is magnified in the life **Eph 3:16-17, 2Cor 3:3, Phil 1:20-21**
  - ii. You can understand Bible Doctrine when exposed to teaching **1Cor 2:9-16, 1John 2:27**
  - iii. You can be effective in witnessing **Acts 1:8, 2Cor 3**
  - iv. You can have guidance and assurance from God, **Rom 8:14-16**
  - v. It is the basis for all true worship **John 4:24, Phil 3:3**
  - vi. It becomes the basis for effective prayer **Eph 6:18**
  - vii. It means to help carnal or reversionistic believer return to fellowship with God. **Gal 6:1**
11. Spirituality is one of the original source of Divine Good:
- i. Divine Good is reward able **1Cor 3:12-**
  - ii. Human Good produced in carnality or reversionism is destroyed at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ related to efficiency ratings for the believer.
12. Specific Nomenclature for spirituality:
- i. Positive Nomenclature:
    - a. Walking in the spirit **Gal 5:16**
    - b. Walk in the light **1John 1:7**
    - c. Be filled with God the Holy Spirit **Eph 5:18**
    - d. Be a partaker of the divine nature **2Pet 1:4**
  - ii. Negative Nomenclature:
    - a. Quench Not God the Holy Spirit **1Thes 5:19**
      - i ) When the believer is under the control of the Old Sin Nature it is because of commission of sin
      - ii ) The Old Sin Nature has areas of weakness and strength
      - iii ) Quenching God the Holy Spirit is producing Human Good from the area of strength of the Old Sin Nature.
    - b. Grieve Not God the Holy Spirit
      - i ) This is the believer who sins under and is under carnality
    - c. These mean that you are NOT under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit but if you use rebound then you move back under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
13. Emotion nor ecstasies DO NOT characterize spirituality in the Church Age 2Cor 6:11-12, Rom 16:17-18
- i. Only in the millennial dispensation is there any ecstatic association with spirituality.
  - ii. In the Church Age the believer is representing the absent Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the world of Satan and because this is the world of Satan and ever believer in the Royal Family of God is an ambassador for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and as Royal Family of God we represent Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who is seated at the right hand of God the Father.
  - iii. Therefore the Filling of God the Holy Spirit does not include ecstatic functions for the believer.
  - iv. You can be emotional and appreciate the lord with emotion but the actual mechanics of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit have no related ecstatic functions.

- v. Having spiritually related emotion is NOT spirituality and NOT the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
  - vi. In the millennium Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ will be present on the earth therefore there will be the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit **Ez 36:27, 37:14, Jer 31:33** and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit will have ecstatic emotion. **Is 29:19, 32:15, 44:3, Ez 39:29, Zech 12:10, Joel 2:28-29**
  - vii. Having great category I Love or Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ can bring on emotion but this is not spirituality and NOT related to the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
14. The Royal Family of God is in partnership with God the Holy Spirit Phil 2;2
15. confidence regarding the Filling of God the Holy Spirit comes from understanding Bible Doctrine 1John 3:20-21
16. There must be clarification between means and results:
- i. The power
  - ii. The Means of obtaining the power
  - iii. The results of that power
  - iv. There are 2 basic powers in the life of the believer:
    - a. Power of God the Holy Spirit
    - b. Power of Bible Doctrine
    - c. These lead to the balance of residence in the Spiritual Life.
  - v. The means of obtaining the power of God the Holy Spirit is rebound procedure
  - vi. The means of obtaining the power of Bible Doctrine is the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception
  - vii. The results are often confused with the means and the results of spirituality are NOT spirituality itself and include.
    - a. Function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception
    - b. Divine Guidance
    - c. Yieldedness
    - d. Witnessing
    - e. Prayer
    - f. But these are NOT the means of spirituality and you are not spiritual because you engage in any of these.
17. Pseudo Spirituality or what spirituality is NOT:
- i. It is not “yielding” or dedicating or doing some other overt activity.
    - a. To God these are results of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and spirituality NOT ever the means **Rom 6:13, 19, 12;1**
    - b. The state of being under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the state of yieldedness.
      - i ) Never is yieldedness a means to an end but it is always a result of being spiritual.
  - ii. One of the great occupational hazards to believers is PERSONALITY Imitation.
    - a. This is imitating the personality of someone you admire or associating some superficial mannerism with spirituality.
      - i ) This could be wearing particular clothing or ragged clothes or neglecting grooming or not bathing, not using cosmetics, or content of speech using cliches or stereotyped language, or poor posture, facial expressions of sincerity, ETC.
      - ii ) Every believer must distinguish between PERSONALITY and SPIRITUALITY.
  - iii. Spirituality by self crucifixion which is related to the prior system originating from erroneous interpretation of **Rom 6**.



- a. Self cannot crucify self and ego cannot cancel ego and self is crucified on the basis of retroactive positional truth.
  - i ) Without understanding positional truth you try to crucify self in your life.
- iv. Spirituality by Taboo where you cannot be a great believer until you give us things:
  - a. A Taboo is a prohibition set up religious or social groups and is a forbidden activity which is not forbidden by Bible Doctrine but is by the group.
  - b. Taboos are legalism and spiritual bullying and customs of the legalistic self righteous or religious believer.
  - c. Taboos include: No drinking alcohol, No dancing, No Smoking, No card playing, No movies, No mixed gender swimming, No cosmetics, No fun on Sunday, ETC.
    - i ) Anything the unbeliever can do is NOT the Christian Way of Life therefore the unbeliever being able to do all these taboos are not and cannot be spiritual.
    - ii ) All taboos are never issues and people will often grow out of things.
  - d. The Christian Way of Life is a supernatural way of life and is based on the Filling of God the Holy Spirit NOT GIVE UP ITIS.
    - i ) No 2 believers have attained the same spiritual growth and we have no right to ever criticize any believer whether they follow our life functions or are totally obnoxious to us.
    - ii ) Therefore the immature believers do not handle taboos like mature believer and legalistic bullying or imposition of personal standards on another is always wrong.
    - iii ) Response is accepting of bullying and giving up something because someone said you have to.
    - iv ) Reaction is rejecting the taboo resulting in conflict bitterness and disillusion and this is where new believers immediately enter reversionism.
  - e. Bonifide taboos exist in 2 areas of the Christian Way of Life:
    - i ) Application of the law of love or of Supreme sacrifice.
    - ii ) Giving up things as a result of spiritual growth thus growing out of things.
- v. Spirituality by RELATIVITY:
  - a. This is a great occupational hazard of the believer when they think spirituality is related to the character of personal sin one's being not so obvious or shocking as another's.
  - b. This includes the delusion that there are DEGREES of spirituality.
    - i ) There are DEGREES of spiritual growth but not of spirituality.
    - ii ) Any sin which a believer commits puts the believer out of spirituality and none are excusable nor better than another.
- vi. Spirituality by Ecstatic functions
  - a. This is the monopoly of the emotional saying they are spiritual because of an ecstatic experience.
  - b. Believers evaluate christian experience and Status Quo by HOW THEY FEEL rather than what is taught in Bible Doctrine.
  - c. Emotion of the soul is not a criterion for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God nor spirituality but is simply an appreciator of what goes on in the sou.

- vii. Spirituality by ritualism (uncommon today).
  - a. Baptism, Eucharist, Sabbath, Lent, ETC.
- viii. Program Spirituality
  - a. This is spirituality by conforming to a churches program.
  - b. Spirituality because of Attendance, giving, teach Sunday school, calling for the church, ETC.
  - c. Action here is substituted for learning Bible Doctrine and many pastors think everyone must be put to work for the church and success in any local church is where everyone is working in the church.
  - d. This becomes MASS Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and always results in MASS reversionism in that local church.
  - e. This caters to approbation and power lust and ignores completely the fact that even a RIGHT thing done in a wrong way is WRONG.
  - f. Right things must be done in a RIGHT Way always.

**1Tim 6:3**

**v3: If, and it is true, anyone continues teaching you otherwise, a different doctrine in opposition to this context, and continually does not concur with the sound doctrines namely those doctrines the words of our Lord Jesus Christ even to the teaching of doctrine pertaining to Godliness or Spiritual Maturity or Balance of Residence,**

**Lesson #93      Series # 467      1Tim 6:3**

- I. Doctrine of Godliness:
  - A. Definition:
    - 1. It is derived from 2 Greek nouns Eusebeia & Theosebeia.
      - i. These mean DUTY TOWARD GOD and are technical for balance of residence in the soul.
      - ii. They have connotation of responsibility toward God and Theosebeia includes the principles of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - 2. Godliness is a synonym for Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and refers to the balance of residence of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and consistent Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
      - i. It also refers to experiential sanctification.
      - ii. It is based on the escutcheon of the Royal Family of God the Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit.
      - iii. Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit is permanent and we also have Filling of God the Holy Spirit which is temporary based on the Status Quo of the believer in or out of carnality.
      - iv. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit only manifests itself in one particular way that being the believer's function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception
      - v. We are out of balance in the soul at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God because of MINUS Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
      - vi. This Minus must become a PLUS and when this does become plus we have balance of residence.
      - vii. With maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul then the Filling of God the Holy Spirit has maximum functional efficacy for the believer thus balance of residence.
      - viii. Maximum Bible Doctrine is whatever Bible Doctrine which is required to achieve Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
      - ix. This produces Cat I Love Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - 3. Godliness is the Status Quo of every believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and is under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

- i. **1Tim 2:2** also tells us that Laws of Divine Establishment and Authority are also needed for godliness as well as the spiritual factors.
- B. The importance of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Human authority for the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and the result of godliness. **1Tim 2:2**
  1. Our Spiritual Life and spiritual growth are related to factors of life which are related to authority functions.
    - i. Military giving us freedom to worship
    - ii. Police protecting the privacy, property and life of the Law abiding citizen.
    - iii. There are MANY factors which go together to lead to our individual Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  2. There cannot be Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God apart from teaching of Bible Doctrine
    - i. There must be maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    - ii. There cannot be any way to properly teach the word of God unless certain authorities are established in the nation itself and unless freedom exists.
    - iii. The authority is that of certain functions in the nation:
      - a. Military
      - b. Police
      - c. Jurisprudence
      - d. Parents
    - iv. We are told to pray for anything connected with Laws of Divine Establishment by which we are given the right and privilege to be here to study doctrine.
  3. We have to have various authorities to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God:
    - i. Pastor Teacher
    - ii. local church
    - iii. Bible Doctrine
    - iv. Etc
    - v. Laws of Divine Establishment authorities as well.
- C. Godliness is related to knowledge of Bible Doctrine **Tit 1:1**
  1. Godliness is a synonym for Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- D. Therefore godliness demands certain types of discipline in the believer:
  1. **1Tim 4:7**, No one ever reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God without certain amounts of self discipline to overcome distractions:
    - i. Interest or lack in the subject being taught
    - ii. Fatigue
    - iii. Smells
    - iv. Lack of Poise in others
    - v. ETC
  2. This self discipline by which you learn Bible Doctrine during bible study is the same as that which gives great capacity for life on the outside and in the local church.
- E. Godliness is profitable:
  1. It comes through respect for authority, self discipline, Filling of God the Holy Spirit, Daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception **1Tim 4:8**
  2. The profit of godliness is both temporal and permanent and all capacity for life comes from godliness.
  3. It is more than self discipline, concentration, a system of authority it is in fact a WAY OF LIFE and no believer becomes effective until he achieves godliness which is Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

- F. The basis for godliness is the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at the end of the 1<sup>st</sup> advent.
  - 1. His death, resurrection, ascension and session is the basis for godliness **1Tim 3:16**
  - 2. Godliness is our objective in life.
  - 3. Godliness can have a bad connotation until you understand its principles and mechanics whereupon it has a very good connotation and application
  - 4. It is in fact YOUR LIFE and all blessing in time, in transition to eternity, in eternity including all rewards are based on this principle.
- G. Godliness is distorted by reversionists who are under the influence of evil **1Tim 6:3-5**
- H. Pseudo godliness is a form of blind arrogance where pride, reversionism and evil meet **2Tim 3:2-5**
  - 1. This is denial or rejection of Bible Doctrine.
  - 2. It is a distortion and the believer under the influence of evil and reversionism and in a phony life.
- I. The great gain of godliness **1Tim 6:6**
- J. Godliness is attained under the principle of LIVING Grace **2Pet 1;3**
- K. Godliness is a christian virtue **2Pet 1:6-7, 3:11**
- L. These passages are telling us that GODLINESS IS Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Super Grace, and our objective in the Spiritual Life.

## II. Principles:

- A. The only standard and the ultimate objective in the Spiritual Life in time is Godliness / Spiritual Maturity.
- B. This Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is accomplished through daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and concurrence with the Bible Doctrines of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- C. Concurrence demands consistent daily concentration on the teaching of Bible Doctrine.
- D. Furthermore it demands consistent bible teaching and the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
- E. Therefore consistent positive volition is the key to fulfilling godliness in contrast to the Negative Volition expressed in this passage of **1Tim 6:3**
- F. In a conditional clause the Prodisis contains the supposition and in the 1<sup>st</sup> class condition the supposition is said to be TRUE, therefore it presents a fact here that in every generation of the Church Age there will be those who do not concur with Bible Doctrine the words of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
- G. The Apotasis then states the results of being in reversionism and under the influence of evil. **1Tim 6:4-5**

## III. Principles of the Apotasis:

- A. Outline of v3-5
  - 1. v3 == Prodisis of the 1<sup>st</sup> class conditional clause
    - i. This is the supposition said to be TRUTH
  - 2. v4-5 == Apotasis of this 1<sup>st</sup> class conditional clause
    - i. This is the conclusions based on the reality of v3
- B. The Apotasis is the clause based on the actual supposition of the Prodisis.
- C. Therefore because certain believers ARE apostate in reversionism and under the influence of evil they fulfill the information given in the Apotasis of these 2 verses.
  - 1. While the interpretation deals with LABOR only it is a general malady of believers NOT interested in Bible Doctrine.
- D. When the Prodisis is a fact then the Apotasis is a resultant fact.
- E. Therefore the conditional clause v3-5 is a CHALLENGE to all believers to keep your priorities STRAIGHT.
- F. In anticipation of the priority problem Bible Doctrine MUST be Priority #1

- G. Bible Doctrine must be transferred from the written bible to the soul of the believer to avoid these problems in the Spiritual Life.
- H. This can only be accomplished by consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
- I. Therefore the real issue of the Christian Way of Life is the believers attitude toward bible teaching or Bible Doctrine.
- J. The only way to progress, grow and be effective in the Spiritual Life is to have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - 1. This is where the effective function of the royal priesthood begins.
- K. It is not what you do but what you THINK which counts in the Christian Way of Life.
  - 1. There is no substitute for Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul especially NOT working for God.
- L. This is why God keeps you in this life.
  - 1. He does not keep you alive so you can WORK for him but in order that you MIGHT grow in grace from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
  - 2. This is a challenge to every believer to continue momentum in the Spiritual Life and move from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and keep priorities straight in life.
  - 3. For the person who gets into reversionism and under the influence of evil he will also end up with blind arrogance and other things mentioned.

IV. The result of Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine:

A. BLIND ARROGANCE:

- 1. Under arrogance a person is aware of his arrogance but when one is under BLIND Arrogance he is not ever aware of his pride.
  - i. This is the holy roller who thinks he has the gift of Tongues
  - ii. Believers who do not believe in Eternal Security saying therefore that their sins and failures are greater than the Plan of God.
  - iii. This is something we have and don't even know and is the mechanic of the sin and fall of Satan
- 2. This person receives blind arrogance because of rejection of Bible Doctrine being in reversionism under the influence of evil in the past which continues in life.
- 3. You don't have to have or be anything special to have blind arrogance and great wealth, success, beauty etc are NOT needed to have this fault in the Spiritual Life.
- 4. It is an automatic thing that ALL PEOPLE IN REVERSIONISM ARE ARROGANT.
- 5. If they don't know they are arrogant they are in blind arrogance.
- 6. If you assume YOUR priorities are greater than GOD'S then YOU ARE ARROGANT.
- 7. God's priority for your life is Bible Doctrine and when anything GOES BEFORE Bible Doctrine then you have set up a system of false priorities and are in BLIND ARROGANCE.

B. All arrogant people are stupid, arrogance is a state of stupidity.

- 1. It is inflating self beyond your ability
- 2. It is true that reversionistic believer will be Arrogant and some having blind arrogance and have morbid obsessions about controversies.
- 3. Reversionism thrives on pseudo controversies and likes to be involved in controversies and stir up controversy by jealousy, slander or implacability.
- 4. Beyond Blind Arrogance there hides in the reversionism the most heinous Mental Attitude Sins.
- 5. Being under the influence of evil his reversionism is fanned to great flames with this controversy.
- 6. The reversionistic believer under the influence of evil always is a trouble maker, causing controversy, using his mouth to start trouble between people and has his nose in the business of others and always upset, disturbed, jealous or reacting to someone.

7. These controversies result among other believers jealousy:

C. Jealousy produces all sorts of Mental Attitude Sins, verbal sins and turns this person into a great trouble maker and causes that person to start all sorts of controversy in every aspect of life.

V. Doctrine of jealousy:

A. Definition:

1. It is a Mental Attitude Sin which demands exclusive devotion and is intolerant of rivalry.
2. It is chagrin or discontent at the blessings, successes, achievements or status symbols of other people.
  - i. Seeing another persons standard of living you desire to have that same standard but you don't have the money to maintain that standard but YOU TRY and this is JEALOUSY.
  - ii. This is KEEPING UP WITH THE JONESES many people want to have things in life because others have them and don't consider their other responsibilities in life and because of them they cannot maintain this other desired standard of living.
3. It is resentment of the attractiveness of a person or the approbation which they receive.
4. In the old English Jealousy had a connotation of ARDENT DEVOTION (No longer continued into modern English) not the Mental Attitude Sin.
  - i. Therefore OLD ENGLISH had a dual connotation for jealousy, 1 a Mental Attitude Sins and the other an expression of ardent devotion or LOVE.
5. This study is confined to the Mental Attitude Sins of Jealousy or Envy.

B. The source of jealousy:

1. There are 2 basic sources for all Mental Attitude Sins of jealousy
  - i. The area of weakness of the Old Sin Nature which produces the temptation to jealousy and all Mental Attitude Sins.
  - ii. In addition it emanates from reversionism or being under the influence of Evil. **1Tim 6:3-4**
  - iii. It is the typical consistent sin of all reversionists and they seek to emulate others and don't have the means of doing so.
  - iv. They lack capacity of soul, background and / or means to do so.

C. Therefore jealousy is a sin inevitably related to reversionism.

1. In unbeliever reversionism **Rom 1:28-29**
2. In believer reversionism **James 3:14-16**
3. Jealousy and contentiousness always go together
  - i. Once a person becomes jealous about another then there is also contention with this other person.
  - ii. This often keeps people from learning Bible Doctrine.

D. Jealousy rejects Bible Doctrine thus characterizes reversionism **Acts 13:45**

1. Jealousy always causes disturbances and attacks authority **Acts 17:5**

E. Jealousy motivates religion the devils Ace Trump card and is the worst thing ever to happen in this world **Mk 15:10**

1. Nearly all religious functions are based on jealousy which results in competition.

F. Jealousy of authority motivates those who don't have authority to resentment and other evil actions.

1. To the extent that anyone resents authority this person is ARROGANT. **Acts 7:9**

G. Jealousy can split all organizations and in fact split the nation Israel into the northern and southern kingdoms **Is 11;13**

1. A jealous person always attacks the object of his jealousy and this always results in conflict.
2. Whenever there is conflict always look for the fire of jealousy in it.

H. So great was the sin of jealousy in Israel a special offering was designed in the Leviticus code **Num 5:11-31**

- I. Jealousy was and very often is the basis for destruction of Category II Love romance or true love. **SS 8:6-7**
  - 1. The only thing which can destroy true love is Jealousy.
  - 2. Othello is a great example.
- J. Therefore Jealousy is a self destructive sin not only destructive toward others **Job 5;2, Prov 14:30**
  - 1. As goes the Mental Attitude often goes the health of a believer.
  - 2. This is the basis for Psychosomatics where the soul has an effect on the health of the body.
  - 3. Jealousy eventually destroys health.
- K. Jealousy is the **STRONGEST** of the Mental Attitude Sins with the worst being **PRIDE**. **Prov 27:3-4**
  - 1. 2 things can destroy you in life:
    - i. A person dropping a huge bolder on you and squash you.
    - ii. In addition you could be buried in sand and also die.
    - iii. However a **FOOLS** Anger is more destructive than both.
    - iv. A person who is always mad about everything is like sand pouring onto their life and destroying them slowly.
    - v. Also there is Anger which can be a flood which smashes you but Jealousy is stronger even than that.
- L. Jealousy never stands alone as a Mental Attitude Sins but causes other Mental Attitude Sins or verbal sins.
  - 1. Much of the discord is caused by jealousy and if you look long enough at someone in jealousy you **WILL** find something to malign, this is **DISCORD**.
  - 2. Complaining about someone else is most often motivated by **JEALOUSY**.
  - 3. There cannot be Cat II or III love of true romantic love or friendship when jealousy exists.
  - 4. Jealous persons are sowers of discord and in every aspect of their lives.
- M. Jealous persons always involve themselves in maligning others.

#### 1Tim 6:4

**v4: Absolutely, from rejection of Bible Doctrine and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, He has automatically received Blind Arrogance in the Interlocking Systems of Arrogance, being stupid, knowing, understanding, comprehending, perceiving nothing, not one thing or zero about the mechanical functions of Bible Doctrine; but in contrast, he, as expected, has a morbid craving, obsession, excessive vicious fondness with controversy and verbal conflict, from which originate jealousy, discord, evil speculations, malignings or verbal sins.**

#### **Lesson #94      Series # 467      1Tim 6:5**

- I. Distortion in Life and principle of application:
  - A. Little Red Riding Hood modern version.
  - B. Since the 1960's we live in a time of great distortion.
    - 1. Since this period we see that people have no idea how to apply Bible Doctrine to their own life.
    - 2. The distortion of life is so great and the 6<sup>th</sup> chapter of 1<sup>st</sup> Timothy is very pertinent today.
- II. How to apply Bible Doctrine to Life **1Tim 6**
  - A. Jealousy is a motivator for "strife" which is Discord.
    - 1. Jealousy is a Mental Attitude Sin which is a motivator for Discord in ANY organization or group.
    - 2. Between Jealousy and Discord in an organization or group is Slander, Maligning, Judging all the verbal sins.
    - 3. If you have a problem with verbal sins the sooner you find out this is your problem the sooner you will discover **JEALOUSY** in your soul.
    - 4. The sooner you discover jealousy in your soul the sooner you can reach the solution.

5. The longer you go on in blind arrogance and ignorance you will never understand why you don't have any friends and why you cannot function in any group effectively.
6. There must never be present in the assembly of the Royal Family of God any verbal sins allowed.
7. There must NOT ever be allowed discord to rise up in a congregation of the local church.
8. Everyone who wants to go to the local church has a right to do so without anyone maligning them.
9. There is no reason to tolerate people who cannot control their tongues and constantly engage in verbal sins and if a person gets to the place where they find it necessary to gossip or malign others they must be removed from the local church.
10. Jealousy when it persists eventually leads to mental illness in the jealous person.
11. The person who is jealous then becomes critical, vindictive, implacable, petty etc, and as a result they destroy their own soul.

### III. Doctrine of Verbal Sins (Sins of the Tongue):

#### A. Definition:

1. Sin is transgression of the Law of God
2. A known sin is a transgression or violation of divine law which one is cognizant of.
3. An unknown sin is also a transgression of divine law which one is NOT cognizant of.
4. In both cases YOU wanted to do it and then DID IT therefore HUMAN volition is always involved.
5. Therefore the difference between known and unknown sin is cognizance of Divine Law or the biblical doctrine of hamartiology.
6. Whether the divine law is known or not human volition is involved in the transgression of divine law.
7. All sin combines the function of the Old Sin Natures area of weakness with human volition THEREFORE ignorance is NO EXCUSE.
8. Therefore Sins of ignorance get you out of fellowship as quickly as sins of cognizance and in both cases YOU DID IT BECAUSE YOU WANTED TO DO IT.

#### B. 3 Categories of Sin for the Human Race:

1. Directly Imputed Adam's Original Sin
  - i. At physical birth God imputes to your genetic Old Sin Nature Adam's Original Sin.
  - ii. This occurs simultaneously with the imputation of 'Neshemah' the spark of Life.
2. The Body's Genetically passed on Old Sin Nature from the Male parent.
  - i. Therefore it should be obvious that at physical birth you are born physically alive having received the spark of life from God and spiritually dead having the genetically inherited Old Sin Nature and the imputed Adam's Original Sin.
  - ii. If you never commit a personal sin you are still spiritually dead from birth.
  - iii. When you commit personal sin it simply is proof that you are dead on the inside and personal sin is a RESULT of having the Old Sin Nature.
  - iv. Getting people to STOP sinning has no effect on the Status Quo of a person with reference to Eternal Salvation
  - v. We must understand that we are spiritually dead before we ever commit our first personal sin.
3. Personal sin where by we knowingly or unknowingly commit a transgression of the Law of God.
  - i. Personal sin is an obvious source of a real problem in life and the thing most horrible about it is that each and every one had to be judged on the cross. (See my idea of the reasons at the end of these notes)
  - ii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ screamed for 3 hours in bearing our sins.
  - iii. From this bearing our sins 3 things resulted, Redemption, Reconciliation, Propitiation and these 3 together are termed the "Blood of Christ".



- iv. These 3 doctrines are the “saving work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross”.
  - v. Personal sin therefore becomes an issue ONLY in the sense of understanding salvation and to the believer as a basis for recovery from carnality and getting back to fellowship with God under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
4. 3 Categories of Personal sin:
- i. Mental Attitude Sins
  - ii. Verbal Sins
  - iii. Overt Sins
- C. All personal sins originate from or are motivated by the Old Sin Nature and are activated by the human volition.
- 1. No one ever commits any sin unless he wants to.
  - 2. Verbal sins always result from jealousy and result in maligning, gossip and judging.
  - 3. These people want to HURT the object of their jealousy and use any means at their disposal to do so.
  - 4. Verbal sins indicate motivation from Mental Attitude Sins especially jealousy and result in Discord.
  - 5. The person guilty of this gets triple compound Divine Discipline.
  - 6. Jealousy as any Mental Attitude Sin carries terrible Divine Discipline
    - i. God’s law says that certain Mental Attitude Sins will destroy the mentality of those involved in them and many psychotic people had begun with jealousy and other Mental Attitude Sins.
    - ii. God himself brings adversities into the life directly to jealous people
    - iii. There are then many verbal sins initiated which brings incredible Divine Discipline.
    - iv. Maligning or Slander as a verbal sin has 2 parts:
      - a. The sins you mentioned which the other person DID commit
        - i) If they committed these sins they are under Divine Discipline and this is then canceled for them and dropped on YOU.
      - b. The sins you mentioned which the other person DID NOT commit
        - i) You get the Divine Discipline for the mentioned sins but GOD drops blessing on them.
    - v. Triple compound Divine Discipline is:
      - a. Discipline for YOUR Mental Attitude Sin of jealousy or whatever motivated your verbal sin.
      - b. Discipline for your maligning or slander
      - c. Discipline for whatever sins you may mention in the slander
      - d. It is far more than anyone can afford to deal with in life.
  - 7. Therefore one of the worst things any believer can ever get into is any sort of VERBAL sinning.
    - i. Most Christians could easily make it to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace if they simply kept their mouth shut.
    - ii. Sins of the tongue are totally devastating to the one initiating them.
  - 8. Human volition is involved in all sins and the instrument of all verbal sins is the tongue:
    - i. To commit verbal sins you must have:
      - a. A Tongue
      - b. A mechanism to breathe
      - c. Vocal Cords
      - d. Mentality to dream up these things
      - e. Mechanism of digestion and metabolism
    - ii. The gossip is the most disgusting and vicious person alive **James 3:6**

v6: **And the tongue is a fire of the Cosmic Dynasphere of evil. The tongue is so placed in the structure of our anatomy as that which contaminates the entire body, therefore it sets on fire the cycle of existence burning down freedom, and is set on fire by the agency of hell.**

- D. Out of the 7 worst sins listed by God 3 are VERBAL sins. **Prov 6:16-19**
  - 1. **Pride = Mental Attitude Sin**
  - 2. **Lying = Verbal Sin**
  - 3. **Murder = Overt Sin**
  - 4. **Conspiracy or Revolution Mental Attitude Sin**
  - 5. **Being a Trouble Maker = Mental Attitude Sin**
  - 6. **False Witness = Verbal Sin**
  - 7. **Spreading Strife = Verbal Sin**
- E. Verbal sins are related to reversionism and motivated by all Mental Attitude Sins **Ps 5:8-9**
  - 1. Enemies are any persons who are jealous or has any Mental Attitude Sin toward you.
  - 2. Judging is a verbal sin and a sign of reversionism **James 4:7, 5:9**

**James 4:7**

v7: **Therefore be subordinate or submit to The Authority of God with residence & function in the Divine Dynasphere resist or oppose the devil and the Cosmic Dynasphere and he will flee from you**

**James 5:9**

v9: **Stop criticizing others of the same kind believers, that you may not be judged; behold, the Judge is standing at the door ready to discipline.**

- 3. Verbal reversionism causes the believer to fall under heavy Divine Discipline **James 5;12**

**James 5:12**

v12: **And more important Believers, Stop making promises with a solemn oath, either by heaven or by earth or by any other oath, but your yes should be yes and your no should be no, in order that you may not fall under judgment.**

- 4. Verbal reversionism produces treacherous and unreliable people **Ps 12**
- F. Verbal sins produce triple compound Divine Discipline **Matt 7:1-2,**
- G. God protects the Super Grace believer who is the victim of verbal sins
- H. The congregation and verbal sins is very important:
  - 1. Control of the tongue and avoiding verbal sins is a sign of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace **James 3;2**
  - 2. Verbal sins can destroy the whole congregation **James 3:5-6**
  - 3. Since verbal sins can destroy the congregation totally it is the responsibility of the Pastor Teacher to WARN with regard to his personal sin, **2Tim 2:14-17**
    - i. Therefore the Pastor Teacher must always eliminate people who are guilty of these verbal sins.
  - 4. Trouble makers in the congregation are characterized by verbal sins **Ps 52:1-2**
  - 5. Separation from those who commit verbal sins is essential **Rom 16:17-18**
- I. Blessing which comes from avoiding verbal sins **Ps 34:12-13**

**Lesson #95      Series # 467      1Tim 6:5**

- I. Doctrine of privacy:
  - A. You have to know nothing about another person especially another believer in order to be guilty of invasion of that persons privacy.
  - B. Definition:
    - 1. It is the state of being apart from observation and company of others.
    - 2. It is the innate right of the Human Race to seclusion when desired.
    - 3. It is the principle of freedom of the individual in the Human Race has a right to retire and remain in seclusion or to associate with others and still keep his business to himself.
    - 4. Privacy, Property, Life are the 3 basic concepts of Human Freedom.
    - 5. The Laws of Divine Establishment guarantee the privacy of each member of the Human Race so that he can exercise his volition UNCOERCED.

6. In addition to the freedom of the Laws of Divine Establishment each believer has the additional privacy of the Royal Family of God Priesthood.

C. Privacy and the Royal Priesthood:

1. Every believer is a Royal Priesthood and we are a kingdom of priests and Royal Family of God forever **1Pet 2:9**

**1Pet 2:9**

v9: You are a chosen or elect race (Church Age Believers & No racial distinction), you are a royal priesthood (Representing Self to God), you are a holy nation (Client Nation), a people for God's own possession (Royal Family of God), that you may proclaim the virtues or excellencies of Him (Christ in Hypostatic Union) who called you out of Darkness into his marvelous light (Divine Dynasphere).

2. We are here to live life as unto the lord and have a right to do so being royal priests.
3. To live life as unto the lord we must have as our constant possession PRIVACY.
4. The Royal Priesthood does have in its basic connotation privacy to fulfill the mission of life in time and live as unto the lord **Col 3:17**

**Col 3:17**

v17: And all things you do in the sphere of doctrine in word or deed, all things by the name person of the Lord Jesus, constantly giving thanks to the God, even the Father, through Him {Jesus}.

D. No believer has any right to intrude on the privacy of any other believer. **John 21:21-22**

**John 21:21-22**

v21: When Peter saw him (John), he said to Jesus, "Lord, what about this man?" (How is he going to die)

v22: Jesus said to him, "If it is my will that he remain until I come, what is that to you? (mind your own business) Your job is to follow me and advance in the Plan of God!"

1. Even when believers are advanced and maturing they still have the very bad habit of trying to minding someone else's business or without any solicitation telling you how to run your business.

E. Violation of privacy always results in Judging **1Tim 6:4+**, Discord, Maligning, evil speculations **Rom 14:4, 10**

**Rom 14:4**

v4: You there, Who are you, who do you think you are, the one who keeps judging the (female) domestic slave belonging to another? To his own Lord, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, he stands firm and stabilized with steady advance without emotion to take the objective under maximum pressure under discipline and authority or he becomes a casualty falling or being slain in the battle from reversionism. For the Lord has the power to cause him to stand fast to hold his ground and when you judge stand he will.

**Rom 14:10-**

v10: But You there, weak, legalistic and antinomian growing and reversionistic believers, why do you always judge, malign, gossip about your fellow Believer, or you also strong believer why do you despise or regard your fellow weak Believer with contempt as their not being as spiritual as yourself? For all believers, the Royal Family of God, shall be present or stand by under orders at the Presiding Judgment Seat or Tribunal Throne of The God, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ

1. We will all have the opportunity, right and pleasure in many cases to stand before the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ and be evaluated by the lord.
2. Therefore it becomes a matter of living life before the lord and making decisions on the basis of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as unto the lord and keeping out of everyone else's business.
3. Only the Pastor Teacher has a right to intrude on the privacy of another believer and ONLY when that person is causing trouble or hurt to another in the congregation preventing them from effectively taking in Bible Doctrine.
  - i. In addition Parents over Children also have the right to invade their privacy.

F. Privacy therefore includes the principle of LIVE and LET LIVE. **2Thes 3:11-12**

1. When people do not have anything to do they inevitably gravitate to minding someone else's business.
2. Normal people have so much to do that they don't have time to mind someone else's business.

3. When time hangs heavy on one's hands they generally have no capacity for life and have a means of livelihood without having to do any work of any kind and therefore they generally wind up becoming trouble makers.
4. They become trouble makers since Bible Doctrine has not given them capacity for life and they have an inclination to follow some activity to assuage their approbation lust or power lust or some Mental Attitude Sins involving jealousy, bitterness or implacability and therefore they start minding another's business.
5. Often these one's want their own freedom and privacy guarded the most stringently but they think nothing of opening their mouths and violating someone else's privacy..
6. Peter is telling these people to Get a Job, Take in Bible Doctrine to gain capacity for life.
7. When you have too many things to do and enjoy in life you don't have time to mind someone else's business.
8. We all have the right and privilege to gather together in any group without having to be concerned about being maligned or slandered by someone else.

G. Reversionists violate the privacy of others. **1Tim 5:13**

1. This applies to anyone who has too much time on his hands.
2. The ability to be idle is so rare that it almost does not exist except on believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
3. The idling engine is still working but NOT GOING ANYWHERE.
4. The believer cannot every idle beautifully as long as they are minding someone else's business.

H. Violators of privacy of others is comparable to violations of other freedoms.

1. Freedom is Life, Privacy, Property.
2. Life is violated by MURDER or TYRANNY of SLAVERY
3. Property is violated by THEFT
4. Privacy is violated by GOSSIP, MALIGNING, MEDDLING.
5. An intrusion into the privacy of others can be compared to murder and theft **1Pet 4:15**.

II. The violators of privacy

A. Reversionism results in the individual becoming devoid of Bible Doctrine in their soul.

1. The reversionist always constantly produces the action of evil speculations and presumptions and he is always making estimates which are erroneous and out of line.

B. The presumption of the reversionist:

1. When ever a believer is prosperous this does not mean he is also a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - i. Not all wealthy or successful believers are in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - ii. Prosperity does not IMPLY Godliness.
  - iii. Godliness is the basis for TRUE permanent prosperity but prosperity does not infer godliness.
2. Because a believer becomes successful or prosperous or even temporarily happy this does not imply he is in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
3. While Super Grace brings prosperity, Prosperity does not mean Super Grace Status Quo.
  - i. Believers can be prosperous for many other reasons besides Super Grace.
  - ii. He can in fact be in reversionism and still be prosperous.
4. While prosperity is one of the characteristics of Super Grace blessing it does not imply that all prosperity means Status Quo Super Grace.
5. Being prosperous does not mean Super Grace Status Quo nor godliness.
  - i. The prosperous believer cannot assume he is a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
6. To assume godliness or Super Grace Status Quo the believer must have functioned daily under the Grace Apparatus for Perception for a very long period of time.

- i. If you have functioned consistently, daily under the Grace Apparatus for Perception for a very long period of time then you can ASSUME that your prosperity is Status Quo Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
  - ii. People who are indifferent to Bible Doctrine and have a Cosmic Dynasphere system of prosperity (which in fact will be used against them later in their life as Divine Discipline) often go around saying that they are in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace because of their prosperity.
  - iii. You must remember that Satan is also in the business of giving prosperity but he simply has a different means of providing it and it is often turned around at some point and HURTS.
  - iv. Satan promotes and has systems for providing wealth and success and other types of prosperity.
  - v. The believer may receive a temporary happiness or prosperity or promotion or success because of being involved in the Cosmic Dynasphere and this only means he is in reversionism and lining up the policy of Satan, EVIL.
  - vi. Divine Discipline removes the prosperity or uses it as a system of Divine Discipline as in King Saul, or Hezekiah, or Annaeus and Saphira.
  - vii. While godliness is and brings prosperity, prosperity is not necessarily Godliness.
7. We are only godly because of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul not because of the material things or position we have in life.
- i. With residence of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul we have capacity for life, love, happiness, Bible Doctrine, blessing, and to love the lord and therefore really enjoy what we have and do not have.
  - ii. Godliness is therefore associated with capacity for life and great prosperity but in v5 this is an erroneous assumption.
- C. Stages of reversionism and pseudo prosperity which bring on the idea that prosperity is godliness.
1. The stages of reversionism overlap but must be separated for definition and clarity.
  2. Reaction & Distraction:
    - i. Reactor factors in the life include:
      - a. Discouragement or disillusion
        - i) Having Eyes on people and living a very superficial life and lacking capacity for life people constantly disillusion you after you place them on a pedestal and they show their feet of clay.
      - b. Boredom
      - c. Idleness
      - d. Overcome with self pity
        - i) People who live life in self pity never can move ahead in life at all.
      - e. Inability to handle loneliness
      - f. Frustration
      - g. Mental Attitude Sins
    - ii. False activities in this stage include:
      - a. Trying to hurt someone
      - b. Trying to make life miserable for another
      - c. Building your happiness on another's unhappiness
    - iii. These reactor factors cause one to move away from Bible Doctrine and what he needs the most he rejects.
      - a. The rejection of Bible Doctrine and ignoring of Bible Doctrine causes one to seek to assuage this rejection of Bible Doctrine.
  3. Frantic Search for happiness:
    - i. This is a function of the Old Sin Nature and the
      - a. The area of weakness produces SINS

- b. The area of strength produces Human Good and bleeding heart and liberalism both political and spiritual
      - c. The Lust pattern is the motivator in life
        - i ) Approbation
        - ii ) Power
        - iii ) Materialism
    - ii. Trend toward Asceticism
      - a. This is over reaction to life having no capacity for life as seen in the MONKS and Self Flagellation, etc
      - b. This often gives a great emotional experience but always results in an emotional hangover when you come down from it and this is the worst.
      - c. So you go back for more and more of this ascetic function and get self deeper into reversionism.
      - d. The only solution is to get turned back onto Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
      - e. These people often pass for GREAT believers since they get into some christian system designed to put believers to work or make them feel like they are improving under greater life experiences which never advance one but in fact make them move backward.
      - f. This often leads to GREAT self abnegation, giving up things, getting on the bandwagon for taboo systems, wearing spiritual clothing which makes you miserable.
      - g. If you have any material possessions at all in life you are not suffering for Jesus and not a believer.
    - iii. Trend toward Lasciviousness
      - a. This is drunkenness, debauchery, chasing, raising hell, living it up, etc.
    - iv. There is something in between where the believer simply avoids Bible class because of some form of entertainment which is more important to him than Bible Doctrine.
      - a. Today there are no really good forms of entertainment in our media first because they have all the programs being dominated by females who control and often physically overcome very large males and secondly because there is no definitive role as to who is the GOOD GUY and who is the BAD GUY and these constantly switch from one to another role to the other.
      - b. It is simply a matter of priorities in life and there is nothing wrong with entertainment of any kind except when a believer chooses for any type of innocuous pleasure over Bible Doctrine this is part of the Frantic Search for happiness.
      - c. Many people don't have that LUSTY attitude or drive in life but sort of slide into the Frantic Search for happiness with various systems of distraction and avoidance of Bible Doctrine.
      - d. It is always a matter of priority in the soul so that the things which are enjoyable and innocuous and pleasant which we all enjoy can become part of the Frantic Search for happiness when they become a priority issue.
      - e. It is best to set up a time and system for consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine either attendance in Bible Class or personal study time.
- 4. Operation Boomerang, the Intensification of Reaction & Distraction
  - i. This where you find that the Frantic Search for happiness does not work even though you try various kinds of systems in your search for happiness BUT none of them work.

- ii. The Frantic Search for happiness does not remove the boredom, unhappiness, frustration, etc but that these are all intensified in reaction.
  - iii. Now the believer reacts to his reactors and all these become greater and stronger and the believer has a constantly stronger reaction which confuses the issue and eventually puts the believer on to emotion.
  - iv. This believer starts to live by his emotion and becomes irrational and whatever common sense they had is also GONE.
5. Emotional Revolt of the Soul:
- i. Emotion has no thought content nor standards nor can it apply anything.
  - ii. Emotion only feels stimulation and it is the Right Woman to the Right Lobe of the soul the thinking part of the soul.
  - iii. The Right Lobe (the heart) the Right Man of the Soul has:
    - a. Frame of Reference
    - b. Memory Center
    - c. Vocabulary Storage the tools of thinking
    - d. Categorical and Technical Vocabulary Storage
    - e. **Norms and Standards** the Conscience with its priorities
    - f. Launch Pad for application of Bible Doctrine.
      - i) Timothy is designed to teach how to make the application of Bible Doctrine real and functional in life.
  - iv. Having interests in life when we are in contact with things we are interested in we enjoy them and our emotion RESPONDS to what is in the Right Lobe of the soul.
    - a. Music
    - b. Drama
    - c. Poetry (Robert Service)
    - d. Literature
    - e. There is always a stimulation of hearing or doing or seeing something or someone you appreciate.
    - f. Categories of Beauty in Women, Dogs, Scenery, Animals, ETC.
  - v. When the emotion takes over and starts to run the man then trouble begins and this is the problem in the soul of many and results in the apostasy we have seen for many many decades in this country.
    - a. Emotion does not have a place in running the soul.
  - vi. We hear about Emotional Revolt of the Soul when we hear about murders and when they are condemned to execution they don't think it is RIGHT to have their life taken.
    - a. In Rape cases where people don't think it is NICE to kill rapists
    - b. People who think we need to have guaranteed income for all the scum in the United States of America.
    - c. Holy roller functions in their churches.
    - d. Some of the nicest sweet people we can ever meet who are pleasant to be around are often in Emotional Revolt of the Soul
  - vii. Emotional Revolt of the Soul freezes and shuts down the valves of the thinking of the Right Lobe and is where people lose their common sense, doctrine, ability to apply Bible Doctrine.
6. Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine:
- i. This is a locked in Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and can result from a great many things.
    - a. It most often results from one or more in combination of the 1<sup>st</sup> 4 stages of reversionism.
    - b. Emotional Revolt of the Soul includes apathy, indifference, preoccupation with things for attending bible class, antagonism with the Pastor Teacher

- or others in the congregation, failure to use rebound thus lacking Filling of God the Holy Spirit, inability to handle prosperity.
- c. Reaction and Distraction and Frantic Search for happiness making a person too busy for Bible Doctrine class.
7. Vacuum in the soul:
    - i. This results from Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine which is rejection of truth thus allowing ONLY LIES to enter the soul and to do so willingly and easily.
    - ii. This is the Mataiotes Eph 4 and this vacuum reaches out and sucks in all false Bible Doctrine and where the believer comes under the influence of evil.
    - iii. This is where the believer's thinking becomes totally EVIL following the policy of Satan for this world
    - iv. They become bleeding heart liberals, getting into social action and want internationalism and world peace etc.
    - v. Being devoid of Bible Doctrine means the Right Lobe circulation system has frozen valves not allowing Bible Doctrine to circulate in the thinking system.
  8. **Scar Tissue of the Soul** / Hardness of the Heart
    - i. This means that all functions of Bible Doctrine are cut off.
  9. Reverse Process Reversionism
    - i. One's priorities and Scale of Values is completely mixed up so that the things which should be first priority are totally ignored and a pseudo system of priorities is put into place.
    - ii. This results in a total distortion of the Scale of Values and gives a complete antithetical viewpoint to everything in life.

**1Tim 6:5**

**v5: and constant irritation, friction, incessant quarreling, evil conjectures or evil speculations between men (people) who have become corrupted, depraved in their minds distorted by reversionism and have become devoid of that doctrine, constantly presuming that godliness, the balance of residence of God the Holy Spirit & Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul, is prosperity or gain.**